





*Uniform with the present volume :*

“MEMOIRS OF THE EMPRESS JOSEPHINE.” 2 vols.

“SECRET MEMOIRS OF THE COURT OF LOUIS XIV.”  
1 vol.

“SECRET MEMOIRS OF THE ROYAL FAMILY OF  
FRANCE.” 2 vols.

“THE PRIVATE MEMOIRS OF LOUIS XV.” 1 vol.

“THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE COURT OF BERLIN.”  
2 vols.

“THE SECRET HISTORY OF THE COURT AND CABINET  
OF ST. CLOUD.” 2 vols.

“MEMOIRS OF MME. LA MARQUISE DE MONTESPAN.”  
2 vols.

SECRET MEMOIRS  
OF THE  
COURT OF ST. PETERSBURG





SECRET MEMOIRS  
OF THE  
COURT OF ST. PETERSBURG  
PARTICULARLY TOWARDS THE END OF THE  
REIGN OF CATHERINE II.  
AND THE COMMENCEMENT OF THAT OF  
PAUL I.

*TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH*



LONDON  
H. S. NICHOLS & CO.  
3 SOHO SQUARE AND 62A PICCADILLY W

MDCCCXCV

1891

*Printed and Published by*  
H. S. NICHOLS AND CO.,  
3, SOHO SQUARE, LONDON, W.

## PUBLISHERS' NOTE

---

THIS work, which forms the eighth in our COLLECTION OF COURT MEMOIRS, is most interesting, and throws much light upon the manners and customs at the Court of Russia during the latter part of the eighteenth century, and contains numerous anecdotes relating to Catherine II. and her favourites and the Court intrigues.

The ninth work, which will be issued during next month, will be "Memoirs of Margaret de Valois, Queen of Navarre; the first wife of Henry IV. of France, commonly called the Great; containing the Secret History of the Court of France for seventeen years, viz., from 1565 to 1582, during the reigns of Charles IX. and Henry III."

LONDON, *2nd July*, 1895.



## ADVERTISEMENT

---

THE Publishers of the following Translation—*i.e.*, the original—have been induced, by a sense of decency and propriety, to suppress or soften a few anecdotes contained in the original, the grossness of which would undoubtedly outrage the public and private feelings of Englishmen. In all other respects, the grand design and the true colouring and shade of this interesting picture of the Semiramis of the North have been faithfully preserved. The lovers of biography will, it is hoped, now receive an unqualified gratification from the perusal of the following sheets, in which not only the portrait of the principal personage is drawn by the hand of a master, but the delineations of the various characters connected with her history will be found marked by a superior degree of knowledge and accuracy. The writer was well acquainted with the Court, and was resident in the capital and

near the person of the Empress during the last ten years of her reign. In this work are developed the frailties, prejudices and passions of a woman whose public character cannot, perhaps, be too much exalted: who, in spite of her faults as a woman, was, as an Empress, the arbitress of the fate of millions, the achievements of whose reign excited the astonishment of Europe, and whose memory will claim the admiration, and, in many instances, the gratitude, of posterity.

# CONTENTS

---

## CHAPTER I

### THE KING OF SWEDEN'S VISIT TO ST. PETERSBURG

	PAGE
Anecdotes respecting the marriage projected between him and the Grand Duchess Alexandra—Portrait of the King, and of the young Princess—Remarks on the failure of this match—German Princesses sent for to Russia—Marriage of the Grand Dukes, account of their brides, and pomp of the Court at that period . . . . .	I

## CHAPTER II

### CATHERINE II

Particulars of the sickness and death of Catherine—Her portrait—Her character—Observations on her Court, Courtiers and Ministers—Influence of the French Revolution on her mind—Question examined, how far she was the patron of letters—Her literary works—Manners and monuments of her reign . . . . .	41
--	----

## CHAPTER III

### OF THE FAVOURITES

Their office made a distinct place at Court—The Empress's generosity in this point—Installation of Zubof—List of the twelve who enjoyed in succession the title of Favourite—Little Hermitage—Little Society . . . . .	96
--	----



## CHAPTER IV

## ACCESSION OF PAUL

	PAGE
Conduct and projects of Catherine with regard to her son— He is proclaimed—His first steps as Emperor—Funeral honours paid to his father and mother—Rigorous pro- ceedings towards the guards—The wacht-parade—Favours and disgraces his occupations—Proscription of round hats and Russian harness—Re-establishment of etiquette—Its ridiculous or cruel consequences—Change in the army and in civil affairs—Peasants—Soldato-mania—Office of punish- ment—Finances	122

## CHAPTER V

## HAS PAUL REASON TO FEAR THE FATE OF PETER III.?

Parallel between Paul and his father—Portrait of the reigning Empress—The Grand Duke Alexander—The Grand Duke Constantine—Zubof—N. Soltikof—Markof—Arkarofof—Repnin —Suvarof—Valerian Zubof—Traits of the character of Paul and his principal Courtiers or Ministers—His portrait— Anecdotes of his conduct when Grand Duke	174
--	-----

## CHAPTER VI

WHAT REVOLUTIONS MAY BE EXPECTED TO TAKE PLACE  
IN RUSSIA

Attitude and strength of the Sovereign power in that country —Two ukases of Paul favourable to a Revolution—Debase- ment of the people—Other local obstacles—The Sovereign Power becomes more absolute—The nobility offended—These alone can change the Government—How, and why—Proba- bility of a dismemberment of the vast territory, and of a change in the manners of the people and form of govern- ment	244
--	-----

## CHAPTER VII

## NATIONAL CHARACTER

Of the Noble, the Courtier, the Peasant, the Artificer and the Soldier of Russia . . . . .	PAGE 267
---	-------------

## CHAPTER VIII

## RELIGION

The Greek Church—Priests—Festivals—Fasts—Images . . . . .	294
---	-----

## CHAPTER IX

## ON FEMALE GOVERNMENT

Its influence on the women of Russia—Their Character—Im- modesty—Manners—Baths—Talents—Charms—The Princess Dashkof . . . . .	308
--	-----

## CHAPTER X

## EDUCATION

Anecdotes of the education of the Grand Dukes— Their governors and preceptors—Education of the Russians in general—Of the <i>outshiteli</i> , or tutors, and their influence—Of the young Russians—Proceedings of the present Emperor unfriendly to civilization—The Gazettes—Radischef—Fable of the Owl and Glow-worm . . . . .	333
---	-----

## CHAPTER XI

## SUPPLEMENT

French and Swiss in Russia—Their proscription—Oath re- quired of them—Billet of absolution—Additional traits of the present Emperor—Reflections . . . . .	362
---	-----

## APPENDIX

Description of the Tauric Palace, and of the feast which Prince Potemkin gave there to Catherine II. . . . .	383
---	-----



# SECRET MEMOIRS

OF THE

## COURT OF ST. PETERSBURG

---

### CHAPTER I

THE KING OF SWEDEN'S VISIT TO ST. PETERSBURG

*Anecdotes respecting the marriage projected between him and the Grand Duchess Alexandra—Portrait of the King and of the young Princess—Remarks on the failure of this match—German Princesses sent for to Russia—Marriage of the Grand Dukes, account of their brides, and pomp of the Court at that period.*

THE Peace of Varena having reconciled Catherine and Gustavus, their conduct and attention towards each other formed a singular contrast with the hatred, animosity and invectives in which they had so profusely indulged during the war. The officers of the two nations were equally eager to display the esteem with which they had mutually inspired each other;

for, the *Cossackines* of Denisof<sup>1</sup> excepted, this war was carried on in a manner very different from what was usual with the Russians. In the Swedes they found enemies whose urbanity was equal to their valour; and the well-educated Russ, while he piques himself on the possession of these qualities, esteems them in others.

Count Stackelberg, so famous for his embassy, or rather his reign, in Poland, was sent into Sweden; and Catherine, who could not live in peace with her neighbours unless they were subject to her sway, or at least at her devotion, sought new means of re-establishing her interest in that country, which the talents and firmness of Gustavus had destroyed. To marry one of the young Grand Duchesses to the Prince Royal then became her favourite project; and it is even said that this matrimonial alliance was a secret article in the treaty of peace. This, at least, is certain, that the Grand Duchess Alexandra was educated and trained up to the expectation of being one day Queen of Sweden; while every person about her confirmed

---

<sup>1</sup> A Cossack general, who distinguished himself by his barbarity and ravages in the war in Finland. It is the same, or his nephew, who commands the corps of Don Cossacks marching into Germany. He is an ignorant man, but a resolute soldier and determined gambler.

her in the idea, and entertained her with the charms and early ripening accomplishments of the young Gustavus. Even the Empress herself frequently jested with her upon the subject. One day she opened a portfolio containing portraits of several unmarried princes, and pressed her to point out which of them she would like best for a husband. The child, blushing, chose the portrait of him of whom she had heard so many fine things, and who was already the lover of her rising imagination. The good old lady, not considering that her granddaughter could read, and knew the Prince of Sweden by his name at the bottom of the picture, persuaded herself that sympathy had decided in his favour, and pursued her scheme with additional pleasure.

It is equally certain that several persons about the young Gustavus endeavoured to inspire his heart with similar sentiments; but I know not whether the King, his father, absolute and despotic as he was, would have given his consent to the match, as suitable to the young lovers as it would be the reverse to the two countries. Be this as it may, the violent and sudden death of Gustavus frustrated the schemes of Catherine, whose design had been no less than to send him at the head of his Swedes into France,

there to act the same part as Gustavus Adolphus and Charles XII. had done in Germany and Poland, in the hope that he would there meet with a similar fate; while she prepared for that of Regent over the minority of an orphan King in Sweden, whom, together with his kingdom, she would have taken under her maternal care.

But the Duke of Sudermania, having seized the reins of government during the minority of his nephew, displayed sentiments diametrically opposite to the Russian system. Less gallant than his brother, he did not feel himself disposed to sacrifice his country to the ladies, and failed not to repay, with reciprocal sentiments, the hatred which Catherine had conceived for him during the war, when the noise of his cannon had reached the inmost recesses of the palace of the Tzars. This naval war, in which, however, he had little reason to boast of his success, had irritated him against the Russians; and he was not ignorant of the raillery and invective which were liberally bestowed on him at the Court of St. Petersburg, or that plays were even acted at the Hermitage, in which he was held up as an object of ridicule.

The vilest corruption, the basest and most cowardly intrigues, were employed against him. Europe éven

saw, with fresh horror, a woman, who pretended to be an image of God, adored on the throne, exciting revolt in a nation, buying traitors, and paying—assassins. To remove the Regent, substitute a council of her creatures in his stead, and harness Sweden to her chariot by the side of Poland were the objects at which she aimed, and which she sought to attain by all the means that could be devised. Stackelberg,<sup>1</sup>

---

1 Of all the ministers employed by Catherine, Count Stackelberg has the most wit and the most pride; and this he displayed particularly in Poland. M. von Thugut being sent to that country by the Emperor, when he was to have his audience of Poniatofski, was introduced into a saloon, where, seeing a man gravely seated, and surrounded by Polish lords respectfully standing before him, he took him for the King, and began his complimentary speech. It was Stackelberg, who was in no hurry to set him right. Thugut, informed of his mistake, was vexed and ashamed. In the evening, being at cards with the King and Stackelberg, he played a card, saying, "The king of clubs."—"You are wrong," said the King; "it is the knave." The Austrian ambassador, pretending to have been mistaken, answered, slapping his forehead, "Ah, sire, pardon me; this is the second time to-day I have taken a knave for a king." Stackelberg, ready as he was at repartee, could only bite his lips. When he returned from Sweden, his time was spent loitering in the ante-chambers of Zubof. He was always one in Catherine's little parties, however, and was thus reduced to amuse, after having served her. His great humiliation, no doubt, was that of being named by Paul lord of the bed-chamber in waiting to the very King of Poland who had frequently danced attendance in his ante-chamber at Warsaw. In this malicious appointment of the Emperor there was something ingenious and noble that does him honour.



whose wit and urbanity had charmed the King, and who, to use his own words, found in that Prince "a true and worthy knight of his immortal Sovereign," demanded to be recalled. His haughtiness could not stoop to act a part of little consequence with the Regent of a young King, after having himself been so long Regent of an old King of Poland.

M. Romanzof, brother of him who was so well known and esteemed in Germany, succeeded him; but, notwithstanding his ingenuity, his instructions were too glaring and treacherous for him to acquire similar respect in Sweden. The plots and intrigues, of which the Regent complained, soon required his recall. Who has not felt indignation at the impudence with which Arnfeldt was set on, protected, and defended by Russia, in spite of the obvious proofs of his attempts, and the most forcible claims? At the very time when all the Kings in Europe seemed to make a common cause to hunt in concert every man who was barely suspected of rebellion, a Regent of Sweden in vain demanded, from Court to Court, a man who had conspired against his life and the Government of his country, which he would have sold and delivered to a foreign Power. From Court to Court his demands were evaded in an insulting man-

.

ner; and Armfeldt at length retired to Russia, to set him at defiance, being allowed to appear at Court, receiving a pension, and living there even during the visit of the King and the Regent.<sup>1</sup>

I shall not trace this plot, which so long engaged the Court of Sweden, through all its ramifications, or name all the agents who were still employed to carry it on; but Catherine did not relinquish her design of ruling there, of acting the part of protectress to the young King, and of exhibiting the Regent as a tyrant who abused the minority of his nephew, or a Jacobin who intended to imitate the Duke of Orleans. She even sent the King an invitation to come and put himself under her protection, or at least to pay her a visit; and nothing was left untried to get him to St. Petersburg without his uncle. It is surprising that the Regent was not driven to extremities. Among the papers of the accomplices of Armfeldt were found several which would have made Catherine appear despicable in the eyes of all Europe; but he did not make them public—was it from fear, weakness or moderation?

He was at the point, however, of entering into

---

<sup>1</sup> In 1798 he was at Carlsbad, worn out with infirmities and despised by all that knew him.

- an alliance with France, which to him seemed the most effectual step towards securing the independence of Sweden against the unbounded ambition of a powerful neighbour; concluding that whatever connections might be formed between Sweden and Russia, excited by private passions or temporary interests, would still prove injurious to the former.

To strike at the root of Catherine's hopes the Regent took another step, which was still more sensibly felt. He demanded in marriage for his young pupil one of the Princesses of Mecklenburg, who was solemnly betrothed to him, and the match was announced in form to all the Courts of Europe. Count Schverin, who had already been in Russia, where his person had gained him many friends among the ladies, was despatched to St. Petersburg with this commission; but at Viborg he found an order from the Empress, which forbade him to make his appearance at Court. This was certainly strange conduct, and displays rather the pique of an irritated woman than the reserve of a Sovereign. What! because the King of Sweden had espoused another Princess instead of her granddaughter, she refused to receive the notification conformably to established custom! A forsaken mistress who paid no regard to decorum and was destitute of true pride,

could have done no more. The respect she owed herself, her sex and, above all, her amiable granddaughter, should at least have saved her from the humiliation of thus publishing her chagrin. On this occasion she ceased to act the part of the *great Catherine*.<sup>1</sup>

To account for this step, no less insulting than indelicate, she directed her chargé d'affaires, or rather *d'intrigues*, at Stockholm to deliver to the Regent that note which has been read with astonishment in some of the public papers, where she not only made the Duke of Sudermania's maintaining the connection between Sweden and France a crime of *treason to Her Imperial Majesty*, but even seems to insinuate that he was privy to the assassination of the King his brother, the avenging of which she claims to herself. The vexation of Catherine and folly of her ministers went still further. Everything announced that they were about to treat the King of Sweden like Sganarelle,<sup>2</sup> by obliging him at the cannon's mouth to break his engagement to the Princess of Mecklenburg, and marry

---

<sup>1</sup> The Russians have aggrandized even her name; they say, in their language, *Yekatarina*, which can only be translated *Arch-Catherine*.

<sup>2</sup> In *L'Amour Médecin* of Molière.—T.

the Grand Duchess Alexandra.<sup>1</sup> The amiable qualities of this Princess would have justified a young King in fighting to obtain her hand rather than to escape it. A report was also spread that the King was already enamoured of her; that his uncle had done violence to his inclinations; and that he wished for nothing more than to defer his marriage with the Princess of Mecklenburg till he came of age, that he might then declare in favour of the other lady who aspired to his hand.

There is no doubt that several Swedes, gained over by the promises of Catherine, and by the hopes they had formed from the munificence of that ostentatious Princess, endeavoured to inspire the young King with such resolutions, and to excite in his heart the same passion as had been raised in that of the amiable Alexandra. A regular correspondence was even kept up between Schverin, Steinbach, and some

---

1 Some planks were laid at that time with great noise and preparation on the ice of the Neva, strong enough then to bear castles, to facilitate, as was said, the passage of the artillery which was going to be sent into Finland. The ministers and generals talked publicly of the approaching war; a proof that it was all a deception; but whether M. Steding was a dupe to it I do not pretend to say. Prince George Dolgoruky, a general too honest and too little of a courtier to be employed by the favourites, was even sent to the frontiers by way of scarecrow.

persons who had access to the Grand Duchesses, and several of the letters were shown to the Empress through the medium of Madame Budberg, chief governess to the Princesses.

After such violent proceedings against the Regent, who could expect to see him bend and submit? This, however, he did; at least, he suffered himself to be either frightened or bribed.<sup>1</sup> M. Budberg, who had just made the tour of Germany to find a wife for the Grand Duke Constantine, having brought with him the Princess of Coburg and her three daughters, was deemed capable of surmounting the difficulties experienced in obtaining a husband for the young Grand Duchess. At first he repaired to Mecklenburg to negotiate a renunciation, and was then sent to Stock-

---

1 A Genevese, of the name of Christian, formerly the right hand and secretary to Calonne, being at Stockholm, introduced himself to the Regent by means of a fable, which he composed in his praise. As he had been at St. Petersburg, he talked to him a great deal of Catherine, of the young Princesses, of the esteem in which he was held at that Court, and of the advantage of an alliance with Russia, by marrying the King to the Grand Duchess. Being persuaded, from the Duke's answers, that he was not very averse to a reconciliation with Catherine, he sent information of it to La Huss, Markof's mistress, and upon these grounds the negotiations, which had been broken off, were renewed. Christian returned to St. Petersburg, to reap the rewards of his address; but the death of the Empress deprived him of the recompense he expected.

holm as an ambassador. Threats, promises, and money at length prevailed. Catherine obtained the point of the King's marriage being deferred till he should be of age; and the Regent, willing, no doubt, to show that his pupil was free in his choice and in his conduct, at length consented to make a journey, whither he was so kindly invited. The affair of the marriage, which was the true motive of this invitation, was touched but slightly, sentimentally.—*If, as they say, the two children love each other already—if, when they see each other, they should still prove mutually agreeable—we will consider of the means of rendering them happy.* Such was the language of the Empress. If she could get the King to her Court, Catherine thought she should have the game in her own hands. Reckoning on the charms of the Princess, and the kindnesses which she herself should lavish on the King, the Regent, and their suite, she doubted not but the young Gustavus, after having seen her whom he had ventured to refuse for reasons of state, would give both the kingdom and the glory of Charles XII. to possess such a bride.

On the 25th of August, 1796, he arrived at St. Petersburg with his uncle and a numerous suite, and alighted at the house of M. Steding, his ambassador.

All the city was anxious to see the young Monarch. The Empress, who was at her palace of Tauris,<sup>1</sup> came to that of the Hermitage to receive him and give him entertainments. At their first interview she appeared enchanted, and *almost in love with him herself.*<sup>2</sup> He would have kissed her hand, but she would not allow it, saying, "No, I cannot forget that the Count von Haga is a King."—"If your Majesty," answered he, "will not give me permission as Empress, at least allow me as a lady, to whom I owe so much respect and admiration."

The interview with the young Princess was still more interesting. Both were extremely embarrassed; and the eyes of all the Court being turned towards them, their confusion increased. No doubt each found the other worthy of the sentiments with which they had been inspired from infancy; and there is reason to believe that, if motives of state on the part of the

---

1 The Empress had purchased Tauris, the principal palace of Potemkin; and in honour to the memory of this celebrated favourite, whom she regretted, she gave his surname to this palace, where she resided in the spring and autumn. It is at St. Petersburg, a short league (a mile and two-thirds) from the Winter Palace, and, like it, situated on the banks of the Neva. It was in this superb edifice that Potemkin gave his Sovereign that magnificent and so much celebrated entertainment in 1791.

2 These were her very words.



King of Sweden, or the whims of the present Emperor, prevent not the match from being brought to a conclusion, the most charming of princesses will be likewise the most unhappy.

No one, however, has more claims to happiness than Alexandra Pavlovna. At fourteen she was already tall and womanly; her figure was noble and majestic, softened by all the graces of her sex and age; her features were regular, and her complexion fair as alabaster; innocence, candour and serenity stamped their divine impressions on her brow; and light flaxen hair, which seemed always arranged by fairy hands, fell in ringlets on her well-turned neck. Her heart, her talents, and her intellect were in unison with her exterior appearance. Miss Willamof, her private governess, had cultivated the noblest and purest sentiments in her mind. Exquisite sensibility, judgment and understanding distinguished her infancy and excited the admiration of all who came near her.

It was difficult to find, I will not say a king, but a young man more interesting, better educated, and of so great promise, as the King of Sweden. He was seventeen years of age, tall and finely shaped, with an air of nobleness, intelligence and mildness; yet there was something of grandeur and stateliness about

him, notwithstanding his age; and he had all the graces of youth without the awkwardness that usually attends it. His manners were simple, though courteous and polite. Whatever he said was spoken with reflection. To serious things he paid an attention not expected from youth; he displayed knowledge that announced a very careful education, and a certain gravity, that bespoke his rank, never forsook him. All the pomp of the Russian Empire, which was sedulously exhibited to his view, seemed in nowise to dazzle him. In that brilliant and numerous Court, he soon appeared more at ease than the Grand Dukes themselves, who knew not how to converse with any person; so that both Court and city soon drew comparisons between them very flattering to the young stranger. The Empress herself could not conceal the pain she felt at the disparity between him and the second of her grandchildren, whose brutal and rude boyish tricks offended her to such a degree, that she put him under arrest once or twice during the stay of the King of Sweden.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 On several occasions when the King appeared in public with the Grand Dukes, foreigners were shocked, and the honest Russians humbled, at the courtly demeanour of the former, contrasted with the rustic behaviour of the latter. At a review of the corps of cadets of the artillery, where the young Gustavus

All the great men of the Empire were eager to participate in the joy of Catherine, who selected such as should give entertainments to her young guest, and fixed the days. Counts Stroganof, Ostermann, Besborodko and Samoilof distinguished themselves by the sums they expended, and the magnificence they displayed. The courtiers sought to surpass each other in the richness of their dress, and the generals in the military spectacles which they exerted themselves in exhibiting to the King. The old general Melissino particularly distinguished himself by the manœuvres and artificial fireworks executed and played off under his direction. Gustavus was in a state of continual enchantment ; yet he wisely employed his mornings in traversing the city on foot with the Regent, and seeing everything that could be interesting or instructive. Everywhere he put such questions, or gave such answers, as shewed the understanding he possessed and the education he had received.

---

appeared attentive to everything most worthy of notice, conversing with the generals around him, and with the Grand Duke Alexander, who was appointed to do the honours of the Empire, the Grand Duke Constantine was running and bawling behind the soldiers, imitating them in a burlesque manner, threatening them, and even beating them. It is certain that the King of Sweden left St. Petersburg as well acquainted with the city as those who were one day to reign there.

The Regent, who appeared to enjoy the honour of his labour in the approbation bestowed on his pupil, is a very little man. His manners are easy and polished; he has an air of acuteness and observation; his eyes are sparkling and full of fire; everything he says displays the man of understanding, and excites reflection in those who hear him.

It may readily be supposed that during this succession of entertainments the two lovers had frequent opportunities of seeing each other, conversing and dancing together; they became familiar, and appeared mutually enchanted. The aged Catherine assumed an appearance of youth, and again indulged in those scenes of joy and pleasure which she had long since renounced. The approaching marriage was no longer a secret; it was the common topic of conversation. The Empress already spoke to the young King and her granddaughter as betrothed lovers, and encouraged them to mutual affection. One day she made them give the *first kiss of love* in her presence—the first, no doubt, that the virgin lips of the young Princess ever received, and which may have left a pleasing and cherished impression that will long render her unhappy.

In the meantime steps were taken to bring this

desired match to a conclusion. The only difficulty which presented itself was that of religion. Catherine had felt the pulse of her Court on this subject; and even consulted the Archbishop, to know whether her granddaughter might abjure the Orthodox faith. Instead of answering in the way in which she flattered herself he would have done, he merely replied, "Your Majesty is all-powerful." The Chief Patriarch of Russia, not finding himself supported by the opinions of his clergy, whom he expected would be more tractable, was then desirous of appearing more Russian than the Russians themselves; and, to flatter the national pride, rather than from respect to the Greek Church, resolved to make a Queen of Sweden of the Greek religion. In proportion as this appeared new and humiliating to the Swedish nation in the eyes of the Patriarch, the more flattering was it to his vanity, and that of his ministers; besides, the popes, chaplains and others whom it would place about the young Queen, would be trusty persons, and well calculated to keep the Princess in the interests of Russia. The King was enamoured, dazzled; the Regent appeared to be completely gained. Could it, then, be supposed that they would reject this arrangement, after such decisive steps had been taken? In the private conversations that had passed, this delicate

subject had been but slightly touched upon. It was scarcely expected that Catherine would have any scruples, and the King had hinted that, from respect to the Russian nation and the prejudices of the people, the Princess should not be obliged to abjure the Greek religion in form. The Empress, persuaded that there was no room for retreat, left to her favourite ministers, Zubof and Markof, the care of drawing up the contract conformably to her views. On the other hand, the Swedish ambassador demanded the Princess in marriage at an audience which was given him for the purpose of making the demand in form; and the day and hour on which the parties were to be publicly betrothed were fixed.

This day, which was the 21st of September, exposed the happy and imperious Catherine to the greatest chagrin and humiliation she had ever experienced. The whole Court received orders to assemble in full dress in the apartment of the throne. The young Princess, habited as a bride, and attended by her sisters, the Grand Dukes and their wives, and all the ladies and gentlemen, with the Grand Duke, father to the Princess, and the Grand Duchess, who came from Gatshina to be present at the ceremony of betrothing their daughter, were assembled by seven o'clock in the evening. The

Empress herself arrived in all imaginable pomp. No one was wanting but the young bridegroom, whose tardiness at first excited astonishment. The repeated going out and coming in of Prince Zubof, and the impatience which the Empress exhibited, soon excited the curiosity and whisperings of the ladies. "What is the matter? Is the King taken ill? He is not very gallant, however. How could he dare thus to make the Sovereign wait, in the apartment of her very throne, and with all her Court assembled!" The King, however, expected like the spouse of the eleven thousand virgins, did not appear.

The following was the occasion of this strange delay. The King was to have been at Court at seven in the evening. At six, the minister, Markof, brought him the contract and the articles of alliance, which he had just drawn up with Zubof. Gustavus, having read them over, appeared greatly astonished on finding they contained articles on which he had not agreed with the Empress, and asked whether it were from her that they were brought to him to sign.<sup>1</sup>

Markof answering in the affirmative, the King

---

<sup>1</sup> These articles were—that the Princess should have her private chapel and clergy in the royal palace, besides certain engagements into which the Swedes were to enter against France, which have been kept very secret.

replied that he could not possibly comply. He observed that he would lay no restraint on the conscience of the Princess; that she might profess her own religion in private, but he could not allow her either a chapel or priests in the palace; on the contrary, in public, and in all outward ceremonies, she must profess the religion of the country. The reader may conceive the surprise and embarrassment of Markof; he was obliged to take up his papers and return to Zubof to inform him that the King refused his signature. He soon after returned in the greatest agitation to say that the Empress was already in the apartment of the throne, surrounded by all her Court; that it was no longer possible to speak to her; that she waited for the King; and that he flattered himself he would not bring the affair to an open rupture, which would be an unheard-of insult to his Sovereign and to the whole Empire. Besborodko and several others arrived in succession, exhorting, urging, praying the King to yield. All the Swedes who were called in inclined the same way. The Regent contented himself with saying that it depended on the King, drew him aside, and took a turn round the room with him, appearing himself to press him, while speaking to him in a low voice. The King answered aloud, "No, no,



I will not ; I cannot ; I will never sign them !” He withstood all the remonstrances, all the importunities, of the Russian ministers ; and at length, vexed at the pertinacity with which they beset him, he retired to his chamber and fastened the door, after giving again a clear and peremptory refusal to sign anything inconsistent with the laws of his country. The Russian ministers remained stupefied at the audacity of a boy who dared thus resist their Sovereign, and concerted how to break the catastrophe to her.

If the firmness which the young Gustavus displayed on this occasion were *his own* ; if the solicitations which his counsellors appeared to make were not feigned, he has given his nation a proof of the greatest character, which cannot be too highly admired in a young Prince of seventeen, whom, it might be expected, love alone would have been sufficient to subdue. It is to be presumed, however, for the honour of the Regent, that the entreaties which he appeared to use with his nephew were insincere, and that he wished only to charge the obstinacy of the King with a resistance which would probably have drawn upon himself the immediate vengeance of Catherine. Most of the Swedes who attended Gustavus were actually bribed or seduced ; being young courtiers, their ex-

pectations were highly raised on the wedding gifts, and they were much mortified at the disappointment. Steding, the ambassador, had a difficult part to act; but M. Flemming publicly declared his sentiments by saying that he would never advise the King to act contrary to the laws of his realm.

These debates between the ministers of the Empress and the King continued till near ten o'clock. Catherine and her Court were still waiting; but at last it was necessary to inform her that the affair was broken off. She rose, attempted to speak, but her tongue faltered; was like to faint; and even had a slight fit, the precursor of that which carried her off a few weeks after. The Empress withdrew, and the Court was dismissed under pretence of a sudden indisposition of the King. Some were offended at the audacity of a petty King of Sweden; others blamed the imprudence of the wise Catherine, who had so lightly exposed herself to such a scene; but the presumption of Zubof and Markof, who had pretended to impose on the Swedes by their cunning, and who had thought of procuring a matrimonial contract to be signed without being read, was particularly censured.

The most interesting victim was the amiable Alexandra. She had scarcely strength to enter her

apartment; and there, no longer able to restrain her tears, she gave herself up, before her governesses and maids-of-honour, to a grief that affected all about her, and rendered her truly ill. The next day but one after this unexpected affair was the birthday of the Grand Duchess Anne Feodorovna<sup>1</sup>; the etiquette of the Court prescribed a ball, but no person would dance. The King went to it, however, and the Empress also made her appearance for a moment,\* but did not speak to him. Zubof did not even conceal his anger against the young Monarch. Embarrassment was visible on every countenance. Alexandra, being ill, was not present. The King danced with the other Princesses, conversed a moment with the Grand Duke Alexander, and retired early, saluting every person with still more politeness than usual. This was the last time of his appearance at Court.

These public days of pomp and festivity were suddenly changed into those of retirement and irksomeness. Never were any so melancholy and unpleasant spent by a King at a foreign Court. Every person was ill, or pretended to be so. The interest

---

<sup>1</sup> The wife of the Grand Duke Constantine, daughter of the Prince of Saxe-Coburg.

that Alexandra had inspired and Gustavus merited, softened every heart in their favour. She was pitied as the victim of vanity and folly; he, for being obliged to make a sacrifice which must have cost him so dear.<sup>1</sup> Execrations were openly bestowed on Zubof and Markof. The conduct of the Empress, who gave herself up to the most dreadful chagrin, appeared inexplicable. It is said that her humbled favourites took the liberty of hinting to her to use force with the young Prince, who was in her power. She went and shut herself up a whole day, almost alone, in her palace of Tauris, under pretence of celebrating the foundation of her chapel, but in fact to conceal from the eyes of her Court the trouble that afflicted her, and to consult with her clergy and favourites on the embarrassing situation in which she fancied herself placed.

Endeavours were made to bring the affair a little in train again. The King saw her, still in private, and the ministers held several conferences. Gustavus

---

<sup>1</sup> He has since married the young Princess Frederica of Baden, sister of the Grand Duchess Elizabeth. Notwithstanding the charms of his young bride, it is supposed that he is not happy with her; and it is to be feared that Alexandra, who, it is said, is to be married to an Archduke of Austria, will not be more so.

at length eluded the business by declaring that, as he could not grant what the Empress desired, according to the laws of Sweden, he would refer the matter to the different estates that would be assembled at his coming of age; and if the estates consented to have a Queen of the Greek religion, he would then send for the Princess. It was rather inconsistent with Russian politics to hear a King hold such language, and it is said that an attempt was made, but in vain, to excite him to set the estates at defiance, offering him the forces necessary to punish them if they should *revolt*. The King, however, would assent to no other terms.

Such was the result of this journey, upon which the daily papers scarcely ventured to comment. The King quitted St. Petersburg the very day on which the anniversary of the birth of the Grand Duke Paul<sup>1</sup> was celebrated, one week after the breach; leaving the Empress replete with ill-humour and resentment, and in the heart of the young Princess an equal degree of grief and of love, which were clearly perceptible by a lingering disease that succeeded, and in the general regret and esteem of the public. Notwithstanding this

---

<sup>1</sup> The present Emperor—the 20th of September, old style, or the 1st of October, new style.

unforeseen catastrophe, in order to prevent any remarks, presents were made on both sides ; and the Russians were so much the more surprised at the splendour and taste displayed in those of the King of Sweden, as they had affected always to speak of him by the epithet of *the poor little boy*.

If little has been said of the Grand Duke Paul on this occasion, it is because he had no more to do in what concerned his children than in the affairs of State. He was at his seat of Gatshina, and was seen at St. Petersburg only once or twice during the time of the King's stay, which was about six weeks. The Grand Duchess, his wife, on the contrary, made that tiresome and fatiguing journey three or four times a week, to be present at the entertainments given, and maintain, in appearance at least, the rights and duties of a mother. This worthy Princess said, " If all my daughters cost me so much pains to provide them husbands, I shall die on the road." Once, for form's sake, the King was at Gatshina and at Pavlofsky. Paul and the Regent seemed by no means congenial to each other ; and on this occasion he appeared to be of his mother's opinion, and even to surpass her in his scruples and devotion to the Orthodox Greek faith. It is not improbable, however, but the whims of Paul may

throw as many obstacles in the way of his daughter's happiness, as the vanity of Catherine and the unskillfulness of her ministers:<sup>1</sup> the dress of the Swedes, their short coats, cloaks, ribands, and round hats, are all of them his utter aversion.

The forced failure of this marriage has truly overwhelmed with ridicule the Russian ministers; and it must have been very humiliating to the old Empress to have suffered such wretched means to have been employed. Does it not appear much beneath the Russian Empire to show itself so embarrassed about the settlement of its amiable Princesses, and to play off so many great and little tricks to provide them husbands? It is true that the unbounded ambition of Catherine seems

---

<sup>1</sup> Some time after his accession to the throne, Paul, going into the apartment of his daughters, began to joke with one of their maids-of-honour on the subject of her approaching marriage. "As to my daughter Alexandra," added he, "she cannot be married, for her lover has not yet learned to write." The fact was, he had just received a letter from the King of Sweden, whose secretary had omitted in the address some of the Emperor's titles, among others the perfectly new one of the Duke of Courland, &c. That no one in future might be guilty of this neglect, Paul issued a particular ukase, in which he prescribed at full length the manner in which he chose to be named; and, as if the vast Russian Empire stood in need of Spanish amplifications to make it appear great and powerful, he took the titles of all the ancient principalities: those by which it is his pleasure to be addressed even in a petition, are sufficient to fill a good page.

to have exerted itself to render their marriage difficult ; like Mademoiselle Montpensier formerly, she has killed their husbands with cannon-balls. A King of Poland, a Duke of Courland, or even a Hospodar of Moldavia: such were the husbands she might have left them.

Let the destiny reserved for the Grand Duchesses, however, be what it may, they will, undoubtedly, be happier than the German Princesses married in Russia, most of whom have experienced the most wretched fate. The fearful lot of Sophia of Brunswick, the wife of the miserable Tzarovitch Alexis, is well known. That of the Regent Anne, the unfortunate mother of Ivan III., was still more melancholy. Even the great Catherine herself, I hope, will not be urged as an exception ; though surrounded with all the splendour of her Court, yet the untimely death of her husband secretly preyed on her mind. The only exception that can be made to this series of unfortunate brides is Elizabeth of Baden-Dourlach, whose character, and particularly that of her husband, the Grand Duke Alexander, seem to promise her a more happy life.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Even this exception seems now to have ceased, as, in consequence of the King of Sweden's inter-marriage with her sister, a restraint, if not a total prohibition, is put upon her correspondence with her family.



Young and affecting victims, whom Germany seems to send by way of tribute to Russia, how often do you bedew in secret with your tears the gilded apartments in which you dwell? How often are your thoughts cast with regret on the loved abodes where you spent your infant years? Would not those you might have passed in the arms of a husband in your own country, in a climate favoured by heaven, amid a people more polished and more happy, at a Court less pompous and less corrupt, have been far preferable? Those chains you wear are but the more heavy for being of gold. The pomp that surrounds you, the riches with which you are decked, are not yours, for you enjoy them not. If love embellish not by his illusions the abode of wearisomeness and constraint in which you dwell, it will soon become to you a gloomy prison. Your lot unquestionably merits the compassion of those who envy it.

What may not be said of the want of pride in those German Princes who send their daughters to Russia to undergo the almost equal hazard of being chosen or rejected? She that is approved is unhappy, and they who are sent back are insulted; for the dowry given them, and the riband with which they are decorated, are but proofs that they have been

offered, examined and rejected. The mother of these Princesses usually accompanies her daughters in this distant journey, thus to dispose of one of them by exposing them all to a degrading choice. The times are certainly much changed. When the tyrant Ivan Basiliovitch (Basilides), desirous of forming an alliance with one of the Princes of Europe, sent to Augustus Sigismund, King of Poland, to demand his sister in marriage, his ambassador was dismissed with a grey mare dressed like a woman. This piece of raillery was worthy of the age, and, no doubt, of the idea then entertained of a *veliki-kniaz*, or Grand Prince of Russia. Now, at the first beck of a Russian autocrat, the German Princes hasten to send their amiable daughters, with their mothers, that the *veliki-kniaz* may choose such as they like, and send back the rest covered with confusion, which neither their ribands, nor jewels, nor roubles, can conceal. How, let me repeat, can the Princes of Germany submit to this dastardly tribute, pay so little respect to decorum, and so wound the delicacy of their children?

Of all the victims thus led into Russia,<sup>1</sup> the two

---

<sup>1</sup> Catherine has sent for eleven German Princesses to provide wives for her sons or grandsons: three Princesses of Darmstadt, brought by their mother; three Princesses of Würtemberg, but

young Princesses of Baden-Dourlach appeared the handsomest and most interesting. Their mother, by birth Princess of Darmstadt, had already been sent thither in her youth, with her sisters, one of whom became Paul's wife. This Princess, an amiable woman and worthy mother of a charming family, would not appear again with her daughters on a stage on which she herself had been exposed, but entrusted them to the care of the Countess Schuvalof, widow of the author of the "Epistle to Ninon," who was charged with the negotiation, together with one Strekalof, whose conduct might be assimilated to that of a Cossack sent to Georgia to carry off maidens for the seraglio of the Sultan.

These Princesses, after a long and tedious journey, arrived at night, towards the end of autumn, 1792, and in terrible weather, which seemed materially to affect them. They were made to alight at the palace in which Potemkin had resided, where they were re-

---

these came no farther than Prussia, Frederic the *Unique* insisting that the Grand Duke should be gallant enough to meet them half way; two Princesses of Baden; and three Princesses of Coburg, conducted also by their mother. The young King of Sweden has made three journeys out of his kingdom to choose himself a wife; while three Princesses have been sent from the farther part of Germany for a junior Grand Duke of Russia.

ceived by the Empress, accompanied by Miss Branicki, her favourite. At first the young Princesses took the latter for the Empress; but, the Countess Schuvalof having undeceived them, they threw themselves at the Empress's feet, and, with tears, kissed her robe and her hand till she raised them up and embraced them; they were then left to sup in full liberty.

The next day Catherine came to see them, while they were yet at their toilette, and presented them the riband of the Order of St. Catherine, jewels and stuffs. She also examined their wardrobe, and, on seeing it, said, "My young friends, when I arrived in Russia I was not so rich as you."<sup>1</sup>

The young Grand Dukes were introduced to them the same day. The eldest, who already suspected the motive of their arrival, had a pensive and embarrassed air, and said nothing. Catherine told them that, knowing the mother of these Princesses, and their country being taken by the French,<sup>2</sup> she had sent for them to have them educated at her Court. On their return from the palace, the two young Princes talked much

---

<sup>1</sup> Catherine often said, towards the end of her life, "I arrived in Russia poor, but I will not die in debt to the Empire, for I shall leave her the Crimea and Poland as my portion."

<sup>2</sup> It was at the time of Custine's expedition into Germany.

of the young strangers, and Alexander said that he thought the eldest very pretty.<sup>1</sup> "Oh, not in the least!" cried the younger, "neither of them; they must be sent to Riga, to the Princes of Courland; they are only fit for them."<sup>2</sup>

What Alexander had said, however, was reported to his grandmother, who was delighted to find that the lady she designed for him, and with whom she herself seemed enchanted, appeared handsome in his eyes. Catherine pretended that she resembled Louisa of Baden, when she arrived in Russia. She ordered the picture taken of her at that time to be brought, that she might compare it with the Princess; and, as may be supposed, everyone present declared that two drops of water could not be more alike. From that moment she became singularly attached to Louisa, redoubled her tenderness towards Alexander, and engaged with

---

1 She was in reality charming; the Grand Duchess Alexandra is the only beauty in the Court of Russia that can be compared with her. Her sister was but a child, being only thirteen, but she had something still more striking and sprightly.

2 These Princes were educated there at that time, as being one day to succeed their uncle on the throne. The elder was intended for the second Grand Duchess, Helena Pavlovna. But the scene is much changed with them; they are now subalterns in the army, and the elder has even been banished to a garrison of invalids.

more pleasure in the scheme of leaving the throne to them as her immediate successors.

The young strangers made their first appearance at Court on the day when the deputies of Poland were admitted to thank Catherine for the honour she had done the republic by keeping three-fourths of it for herself.<sup>1</sup> The Princesses were as much dazzled with the magnificence that surrounded them as others were with their opening charms; but the elder met with an accident, which led the superstitious Russians to say that she would be unfortunate in their country. As she approached the throne of Catherine, she struck her foot against the corner of one of the steps, and fell flat on the ground before the throne. May the sad presage never be realized!

<sup>1</sup> At this period part of the kingdom or republic was left to Poland. The deputies, however, were received only as those of a subject-province. They stood uncovered, the Empress sitting; and she saluted them only by a slight motion of the head, after they had prostrated themselves before her. Count Branicki, husband of the Empress's favourite, was the orator of this humiliating embassy, which would deliver its harangue, however, in the Polish language. The following sentences of his speech are remarkable: "The great Catherine has deigned to speak a word, and give the signal; and despotism, ready to seize on the throne of Poland, fell like an idol." This *word* of Catherine was a pamphlet composed by Altesti, in which all the nobles of Poland were termed Jacobins, and the King seditious; this *signal* was the sending of two armies into the country, and the *idol of despotism* was the constitution of the 3rd of May.

While the young sister spent her days sorrowfully in tears for her absence from her country and relations, which all the pomp of the Court could not obliterate from her mind, and was at length sent away loaded with presents, which afforded her less pleasure than the expectation of soon beholding again the banks of the Rhine,<sup>1</sup> the Princess Louisa appeared to smile on

---

1 Besides several diamonds which she received, a pension was given her, which was to be exchanged for a marriage portion. As she is become Queen of Sweden, I know not whether she has received her Russian dower. Among the presents made her, was a riband of the Order of St. Andrew for her father. This was the first Order in Russia, and Catherine did not even know the number of its knights, as it appeared that the Prince of Baden was one of them already. The Empress, however, would not allow the riband to be sent back, but permitted the Prince to bestow it on his son, then a child. It frequently happened that officers were presented with the insignia of Orders which had been given to them before. One of these, having solicited some other recompense in vain, wore his two similar crosses at once. Catherine, it must be added, so magnificent on some occasions, displayed a ridiculous parsimony in bestowing on the governess of the Princesses of Baden, who had educated them, and conducted them into Russia, a paltry pension of two hundred roubles (£20), at which even the Court of Carlsruhe was indignant. Similar acts of meanness frequently disgraced the liberalities of Catherine. She never gave willingly, except to those who had already too much; she liked better to gratify than to recompense. Towards the end of her life she grew niggardly, in particular towards the imperial family, who were sometimes in want of necessaries, while the favourite and his creatures wallowed in profusion.

the destiny that awaited her. An unknown comforter had entered her heart, and dried her tears. The sight of the young Prince, who was to be her husband, and who equalled herself in beauty of person and gentleness of mind, had inspired her with love. She submitted gracefully to everything required of her: learned the Russian language, was instructed in the Greek religion, and was soon in a capacity of making public profession of her new faith, and receiving on her arms and bare delicate feet the unctions administered by a bishop, who proclaimed her Grand Duchess, under the name of Elizabeth Alexievna. Catherine chose rather to give her her own surname than leave her that of her father, as is customary.<sup>1</sup>

In the month of May following, the ceremony of betrothing was performed with all extraordinary pomp and entertainments. Russia had just finished three wars, almost equally triumphant. A multitude of

---

<sup>1</sup> The patronymic names of the Russians have something ancient and respectable. A Russian might call the Empress, even when speaking to her, *Ekatarina Alexievna*—Catherine, daughter of Alexius. The Princess of Baden, therefore, should have called herself *Elizabetha Carlovna*, as she was the daughter of Prince Charles. The Greeks had the same custom; and we, happily translating the Russian terminations by the Greek, might say Ivan Basilides, Alexander Nicholaïdes, &c., as we say Alcides, Seleucides, Heraclides.



generals and other officers, covered with the laurels they had gathered in battle, added to the number of the Court. A great many Swedes, admirers of Catherine; almost all the Polish nobles who had submitted or were devoted to her; Tartarian khans; envoys from Great Bukhara; Turkish bashaws; Greek and Moldavian deputies; sophis of Persia; with French emigrants, demanding at once protection and vengeance,<sup>1</sup> increased at this juncture the crowd of courtiers attending the proud autocratrix of the North. No Court ever exhibited such a brilliant and variegated spectacle. These were the last resplendent days that Catherine enjoyed. She dined on a throne raised in the midst of different tables. Crowned, and covered with gold and diamonds, her eyes carelessly wandered over the immense assembly, composed of persons of all nations, whom she seemed to behold at her feet. Surrounded by her numerous and brilliant family, a

---

1 One day the young Richelieu, a Persian envoy, some deputies of the Calmucks, and an old Russian madman, whom Catherine created a knight, at the recommendation of N. Soltikof, for having prayed for her, were presented to the Empress at the same time. Richelieu kissed her hand with all the ease of a Frenchman, the Persian with the ceremonies of the East; the Calmucks, throwing themselves on the ground; and the old Russian, kneeling down, and raising his eyes to heaven.

poet would have taken her for Juno seated amidst the gods.<sup>1</sup>

The arrival of the Princess of Saxe-Coburg with her three daughters, one of whom became the wife of the Grand Duke Constantine, was less striking. The Russians even indulged in witty remarks on these Princesses, and on the antiquity and bad taste of their dress. They were not presented till their wardrobe had been renewed. Constantine did not like either of them. He said they had a German air, so Russian was his taste. It was necessary to inflame

---

1 This in fact took place, particularly in the following strophe of the epithalamium:—

Ni la reine de Thèbe au milieu de ses filles,  
 Ni Louis de ses fils assemblant les familles,  
 Ne formèrent jamais un cercle si pompeux.  
 Trois générations vont fleurir devant elle,  
 Et c'est elle toujours qui charmera nos yeux :  
 Fièrè, d'être leur mère, et non d'être immortelle.  
 Telle est Junon parmi les dieux.

The Theban Queen amid her daughters fair,  
 The sons of Louis, an illustrious race,  
 Ne'er form'd a circle proudly born to grace  
 The wond'ring world with majesty so rare !

Three glorious springs shall deck the reverend tree,  
 Whose stem immortal parentage shall claim,  
 And still the peerless origin shall be  
 Like Juno, first in splendour as in fame.

his imagination to induce him to make a choice; and this fell on the youngest, a little brunette, who displayed marks of wit, which excited interest in her behalf in the bosom of Constantine, of whose character we shall have occasion to speak hereafter.

.

## CHAPTER II

## CATHERINE II

*Particulars of the sickness and death of Catherine—Her portrait—Her character—Observations on her Court, Courtiers and Ministers—Influence of the French Revolution on her mind—Question examined, how far she was the patron of letters—Her literary works—Manners and monuments of her reign.*

THE visit of the King of Sweden to St. Petersburg, the entertainments to which it gave rise, and the mortifying circumstances in which it terminated, hastened, no doubt, the death of Catherine. For six weeks she had given herself up to a round of amusements, and subjected herself to continual fatigue; for to her, the going up and down the stairs of the palace, the business of dressing, and appearing in public, had long been a wearisome task; and the more so, as she was still desirous of looking young and healthful, and was always averse to the use of her sedan. Aware of the first of these difficulties, several of her courtiers, upon occasion of the balls and entertain-

ments that were given by them in honour of the King, contrived for her ease that the stairs of their houses should form a gentler ascent, which was richly carpeted. A gallantry of this kind cost Besborodko no less a sum than three thousand roubles (£300), which he expended to render his house commodious for her reception.

Towards the close of her life, Catherine had so increased in size as to be an object almost of deformity. Her legs, which were always swollen and often ulcerated, had entirely lost their shape, and she could no longer boast that handsome foot which had formerly been so much admired. The noted pirate, Lambro Canziani, whom Admiral Ribas, through the favour of Zubof, had introduced to the Empress, and who acted in the quality of buffoon, after having previously served her as corsair in the Archipelago, was desirous also of prescribing as her physician. He accordingly persuaded her that he had an infallible remedy for her legs; and he himself was even at the pains of fetching water from the sea for the purpose of a cold bath, to be used once a day for her feet. The application succeeded at first, and she joined with Lambro in ridiculing the prescriptions of her physicians; but the swellings soon returned, and, from

late hours and fatigue, her disorder greatly increased. When the King's refusal was announced to her, and she was obliged to dismiss her Court, after having summoned it to celebrate the betrothing of her granddaughter, she experienced a slight stroke of apoplexy. From the constraint which for several days after she imposed on herself, that she might appear with her accustomed serenity, and betray no symptom of the vexation she felt at the refractoriness of *the little King*,<sup>1</sup> the blood and humours crowded still more to the head. Her face, which was before highly inflamed, became at this period additionally red and livid, and her indisposition returned with greater frequency.

I should not, perhaps, have mentioned here the signs and tokens of her death. But as miracles are still in fashion in Russia, it may not be amiss to observe that, on the evening of her visit with the King at the house of Samoïlof, a bright star shot from the sky over her head and fell into the Neva; and for the honour of truth and funereal tokens, I

---

1 This was an epithet which she gave him in derision. The young Prince was ambitious from his infancy of the title of grown man, which he strove by his actions to merit. Walking one day in a park, two women cried, "Let us run to the pathway to see our little King." Gustavus, hearing them, replied, somewhat piqued, "Little King! Pray, ladies, have you then a greater one?"

must add that this fact was the common talk of the whole city. Some would have it that this beautiful star was a prognostic of the young Queen's journey into Sweden; while others, remarking that it made its descent near the spot where the citadel and tombs of the Sovereigns were situated, tremblingly whispered that it was the harbinger of the approaching dissolution of the Empress. I say, *tremblingly whispered*; for, in Russia, death and the Empress were words that could not be coupled together without danger of punishment.

But, waiving this, it is certain that on the 4th of November, 1796, Catherine, having what was called her *little hermitage* (small party), displayed an uncommon share of spirits. By a vessel from Lübeck she had received the news of the French, under Moreau, having been obliged to repass the Rhine; and she wrote upon this occasion to the Austrian Minister, Cobentzel, a very humorous note.<sup>1</sup> She amused herself greatly with Leof Narishkin, her grand *écuyer* and first buffoon, trafficking with him for all sorts of baubles, which he usually carried in his

---

<sup>1</sup> The note, which was in everybody's hands, was this: "I hasten to inform your excellent Excellence that the excellent troops of the excellent Court have given the French an excellent drubbing."

pockets to sell to her, like an itinerant pedlar, whose character he attempted to personate. She rallied him with great pleasantry upon the terrors to which he was subject upon hearing of any obituary intelligence, by informing him of the death of the King of Sardinia, which she had also just learned; and she spoke of this event in a free and jocular manner. She retired, however, somewhat earlier than usual, assigning as a reason that too much laughing had given her slight symptoms of colic.

The next morning she arose at her accustomed hour, and, sending for her favourite, gave him a short audience. She afterwards transacted business with her secretaries, but dismissed the last that came, bidding him wait in the ante-chamber, and she would presently call for him to finish what he was about. The valet, Zachary Constantinowitz, waited for a while; but, uneasy at not being called, and hearing no noise in the apartment, he at last opened the door, when he saw, to his surprise and terror, the Empress prostrate on the floor, between the two doors leading from the alcove to her water-closet. She was already without sense or motion. The valet ran for the favourite, whose apartment was above; physicians were sent for, and consternation and tumult prevailed about the



Empress. A mattress was spread near the window: she was laid upon it. Bleeding, bathing, and all the means usually resorted to upon such occasions, were employed, and they produced their ordinary effect. She was still alive; her heart was found to beat, but there was no other perceptible sign of motion. The favourite, seeing her in this alarming state, sent to the Counts Soltikof and Besborodko, and others of the nobility. Everyone was eager to despatch a messenger to the Grand Duke Paul; and the person employed in this service by Zubof was his own brother. Meanwhile the imperial family and the rest of the household were ignorant of the situation of the Empress, which was kept secret. Till eleven o'clock, her accustomed hour for summoning the Grand Dukes, it was not known that she was at all indisposed, and the circumstance of her being seriously ill did not transpire till one; and was then mentioned with a timid and mysterious caution, through fear of the consequences of mistake. You might see two courtiers meet each other, both perfectly acquainted with the circumstance of the apoplexy, yet questioning one another, answering in turn, watching each other's looks, and cautiously advancing step by step, that they might arrive both together at the terrible point, and be able to talk of

what both already knew. It is necessary to have frequented a Court, and especially the Court of Russia, to be able to judge of the importance of these things, and exculpate the historian from the charge of absurdity for relating actual circumstances.

In the meantime, those whom chance, or their connection with office, placed in the way of being early informed of the truth, hastened to communicate it to their families and friends; for the death of the Empress was looked to as the epoch of some extraordinary revolution in the State, as well from the character of Paul as from the projects and dispositions of which Catherine was suspected. It was, therefore, of importance to be able to take precautions in time; and the Court first, and presently the city, were in an alarming state of agitation and anxiety.

Five or six couriers arrived nearly at the same instant at Gatshina, but the Grand Duke was absent. He had gone a few miles from his Court to inspect a mill, which he had ordered to be constructed. Upon receiving the intelligence, he appeared extremely affected. He soon, however, recovered from his emotion, asked a thousand questions of the messengers, and gave orders for his journey, which he performed with such expedition that in less than three

hours he was at St. Petersburg, which is twelve leagues from his residence at Gatshina. He arrived at eight in the evening, with his wife, and found the palace in the greatest confusion.

His presence attracted about him some courtiers and ministers, while others disappeared. The favourite, a prey to grief and terror, had relinquished the reins of the Empire ; the great, occupied with the consequences of this event, arranged their affairs in private ; all the intrigues of the Court were disconcerted in a moment, and like the spokes of a wheel when the stock is destroyed, were without point of union.

Paul, accompanied by his whole family, repaired to the chamber of his mother, who gave, however, no sign of recognition at the appearance of her assembled children. She was lying on the mattress perfectly still, and without any appearance of life. The Grand Duke Alexander, his wife, and the young Princesses burst into tears, and formed round her a most affecting group. The Grand Duchesses, the gentlemen and ladies of the Court, were up all night, waiting the last sigh of the Empress. The Grand Duke and his sons were frequently by her side to witness this event ; and the next day passed in the same anxiety and expectation.

Paul, whose grief for the loss of a mother by whom he had been so little beloved could not be expected to be extremely overwhelming, was occupied in giving directions and preparing everything for his accession. Catherine still breathed, although nothing was thought of but the changes that were about to take place and the individual who was on the point of succeeding her.

By degrees, the apartments of the palace were filled with officers who had come with expedition from Gatchina, and were dressed in a manner so different from that which prevailed at St. Petersburg that they appeared to belong to some remote age, or to have arrived from another world. In the pale and haggard countenances of the old courtiers, wherever they were seen, mortification, terror and grief were depicted; and they successively retired, to give place to the new-comers. The palace was surrounded, and all the streets that led to it were crowded with carriages; and he who could claim the slightest acquaintance passed the day there, waiting the effect of this sudden event. Orders were given that no person should quit the city, and no courier was suffered to pass the gates.

It was generally believed that Catherine had died the preceding evening, but that her death, for reasons

of State, was still concealed. The fact, however, was that she was all this time in a kind of lethargy. The remedies which were administered produced their natural effect, and she had even moved one of her feet, and pressed the hand of one of her women; *but, happily for Paul, the power of speech was gone for ever.* About ten in the evening she appeared suddenly to revive, and began to rattle in the throat in a most terrible manner. The imperial family hastened to her; but this new and shocking spectacle was too much for the Princesses, who were obliged to withdraw. At last she gave a lamentable shriek, which was heard in the neighbouring apartments, and died, after having continued for thirty-seven hours in a state of insensibility. During this period she gave no indication of pain till the moment before she expired, and her death appears to have been as happy as her reign.

If the love which Monarchs have deserved from their subjects has been sometimes estimated by the impression produced by their death, Russia is not the country to which we can apply the observation, unless, indeed, the Court be taken for the whole Empire. The individual who was the greatest loser by the death of the Empress, and whom it hurled at once from the pinnacle of greatness and power into the

obscurity from which favour had raised him, was also the individual who was most afflicted at the event ; and there was something in the expression of his grief that was truly affecting. The young Grand Duchesses, who had a tender regard for their grandmother, with whom they had lived on terms of greater familiarity than with their own parents, paid her also the unfeigned tribute of their tears. They considered her as their providing hand, and as the source from which flowed all their enjoyments and felicity. Those ladies and courtiers, too, who had experienced the kindness of her disposition and enjoyed the pleasure of her private society, where she displayed a most captivating amenity, in like manner lamented her death. Even the young persons of her Court, both male and female, regretted the happy evenings of the Hermitage, and that freedom of ease and pleasure which Catherine so well knew how to inspire. And they contrasted with these the military constraint and etiquette that were likely to succeed. The wits and railers of St. Petersburg groaned in secret that they now must respect the very persons whom they so long had been accustomed to ridicule and despise, and submit to a course of life that had been the constant and inexhaustible topic of their sarcasms and jests.

The menial servants of Catherine sincerely bewailed a good and generous mistress, whose mild and equal temper, and noble and dignified character, were above those daily bickerings, those gusts of petty passion, which are the poison of domestic life. In truth, if we judge of Catherine as of the mother of a family, and consider her palace as her house, her courtiers as her children, she was entitled to lamentations and tears.

There were other personages on this disastrous occasion of a pale and woful aspect; but these were incapable of weeping. In them it was an air of guilt rather than of sadness, and their grief would bear no construction favourable to Catherine. I refer to those creatures of the favourite, those hypocritical ministers, those dastardly courtiers, that crowd of wretches of all states and conditions, whose fortunes and hopes were derived from the easy disposition of Catherine and the abuses of her reign. In this dark list must be also included those who had a share in the Revolution of 1762. These men appeared to awake as from a long dream which had suspended reflection, to be delivered up to the influence of terror and, perhaps, of remorse.

As to the opinion of the people, that pretended touchstone of the merit of Sovereigns, nothing could

equal their indifference as to what was going on in the palace. It was said, indeed, that provisions would be cheaper, and the power of masters over their slaves be restrained and limited. The principal inhabitants of the city were in a state of silent consternation.

In so extensive a capital, and especially in so polite and brilliant a Court, some extraordinary changes were quickly visible. The air of freedom, of ease and of gallantry, which had so lately prevailed, was succeeded by a visible constraint. In the apartments in which Catherine had just fallen into the sleep of death, the word of command, the clattering of swords and of soldiers, and the echo of enormous boots, already resounded. From the sombre dress of the ladies, the unusual garb of the men, the strange phraseology which everyone was eager to adopt, and the general contrasts with what had existed before, those who had been acquainted with each other met without being known, spoke without being understood, and asked questions without receiving an answer. The Day of St. Catherine, hitherto celebrated with so much pomp and rejoicings, arrived at this interval, as if to depict with greater horror the desolation of this fairy palace, heretofore the theatre of so many pleasures and entertainments.



Though nearly seventy years of age, Catherine still retained some remains of beauty. Her hair was always dressed in the old style of simplicity, and with peculiar neatness, and no head ever became a crown better than hers. She was of the middle stature, and corpulent. Few women, however, with her corpulence, would have attained the graceful and dignified carriage for which she was remarked. In private, the good-humour and confidence with which she inspired all about her, seemed to keep up an unceasing scene of youth, playfulness and gaiety. Her charming conversation and familiar manners placed all those who were admitted to her dressing-room, or assisted at her toilet, perfectly at ease; but the moment she had put on her gloves to make her appearance in the neighbouring apartments, she assumed a very different countenance and deportment. From an agreeable and facetious woman she appeared all at once the reserved and majestic Empress. Whoever had seen her then for the first time would have found her not below the idea he had previously formed, and would have said, "This is, indeed, the Semiramis of the North!" The maxim, *Præsentia minuit famam*, could no more be applied to her than to Frederick the Great. I saw her once or twice a week for ten years, and every time

with renewed admiration. My eagerness to examine her person caused me successively to neglect prostrating myself before her with the crowd: but the homage I paid by gazing at her was surely more flattering. She walked slowly and with short steps, her majestic forehead unclouded, her look tranquil, and her eyes often cast on the ground. Her mode of saluting was by a slight inclination of the body, yet not without grace; but the smile she assumed vanished with the occasion. If, upon the introduction of a stranger, she presented her hand to him to kiss, she demeaned herself with great courtesy, and commonly addressed a few words to him upon the subject of his travels and his visit; but all the harmony of her countenance was instantly discomposed, and you forgot for a moment the great Catherine, to reflect on the infirmities of an old woman, as, on opening her mouth, it was apparent that she had no teeth. Her voice, too, was hoarse and broken, and her speech inarticulate. The lower part of her face was rather large and coarse; her grey eyes, though clear and penetrating, evinced something of hypocrisy; and a certain wrinkle at the base of the nose indicated a character somewhat sinister. The celebrated Lampi had lately painted a striking likeness of her, though

extremely flattering. Catherine, however, remarking that he had not entirely omitted that unfortunate wrinkle, the evil genius of her face, was greatly dissatisfied, and said that Lampi had made her too serious and too wicked. He must accordingly retouch and spoil the picture, which appeared now like the portrait of a young nymph, though the throne, the sceptre, the crown, and some other attributes, sufficiently indicate that it is the picture of an Empress. In other respects the performance well deserves the attention of the amateur, as also does a portrait of the present Empress by the same hand.<sup>1</sup>

The character of Catherine can, in my opinion, only be estimated from her actions. Her reign, for herself and her Court, had been brilliant and happy ; but the last years of it were particularly disastrous for the people and the Empire. All the springs of

---

1 The celebrated le Brun, who was at St. Petersburg, and who could not obtain the honour of taking her likeness when living, saw her after she was dead, and drew it from his memory and imagination. I saw the rough draft of this portrait, which was extremely like. The following humorous advice was given to M. le Brun to render the resemblance perfect: Take a map of the Russian Empire for the canvas, the darkness of ignorance for the ground, the spoils of Poland for the drapery, human blood for the colouring, the monuments of her reign for the outlines, and for the shading six months of the reign of her successor.

government became debilitated and impaired. Every general, governor, chief of department, was become a petty despot. Rank, justice, impunity, were sold to the highest bidder. An oligarchy of about a score of knaves partitioned Russia, pillaged, by themselves or others, the finances, and shared the spoils of the unfortunate. Their lowest valets, and even their slaves, obtained, in a short time, offices of considerable importance and emolument. One had a salary of from three to four hundred roubles a year (£30 or £40), which could not possibly be increased by any honest dealing, yet was he sufficiently rich to build round the palace houses valued at fifty thousand crowns (£12,500). Catherine, so far from enquiring into the impure source of such sudden wealth, rejoiced to see her capital thus embellished under her eyes, and applauded the inordinate luxury of these wretches, which she erroneously considered as a proof of the prosperity of her reign. In the worst days of France, pillage was never so general, and never so easy. Whoever received a sum of money from the Crown for any undertaking had the impudence to retain half, and afterwards complained of its insufficiency, for the purpose of obtaining more; and either an additional sum was granted or the enterprise abandoned. The great

plunderers even divided the booty of the little ones, and thus became accomplices in their thefts. A minister knew almost to a rouble what his signature would procure to his secretary; and a colonel felt no embarrassment in talking with a general of the profits of the army, and the extortions he made upon the soldiers.<sup>1</sup> Every one, from the peculiar favourite to the lowest in employ, considered the property of the State\* as a harvest to be reaped, and grasped at it with as much avidity as the populace at an ox given up to be devoured. The Orlofs, as well as Potemkin and Panin, filled their places with a degree of dignity. The first displayed some talents and an inordinate ambition. Panin had greater genius, greater patriot-

1 The colonel was the despot of his regiment, of which he had the exclusive management, in whole and in detail. The Russian army, wherever it may be situated, whether in a subjected territory, the territory of an ally, or that of an enemy, always living in free quarters, the colonels regularly take to themselves nearly the whole of the money destined for its support. By way of indemnification, they turn the horses into the fields, and the men into the houses of the peasants, there to live free of expense. The pay of a colonel is from seven to eight hundred roubles (£70 or £80) only, a year; but the profit he derives from a regiment amounts to fifteen or twenty thousand roubles (£1,500 or £2,000). A minister, asking one day some favour of the Empress for a poor officer, she replied, "If he be poor, it is his own fault; he has long had a regiment." Thus robbery was privileged, and probity laughed at and despised.

ism, and more virtues.<sup>1</sup> In general, during the last years of Catherine, none were so little as the great. Without knowledge, without penetration, without pride, without probity, they could not even boast that false honour which is to loyalty what hypocrisy is to virtue. Unfeeling as bashaws, rapacious as tax-gatherers, pilfering as lackeys, and venal as the meanest abigails of a play, they might truly be called the rabble of the Empire. Their hirelings, their valets, and even their relations, did not accumulate wealth by the gifts of their bounty, but by the extortions committed in their name, and the traffic made of their credit. They also were robbed themselves, as they robbed the Crown. The meanest services rendered to these men were paid by the State, and the wages of their buffoons, ser-

---

<sup>1</sup> He did one act of generosity in particular, which has found no imitators. The education of the Grand Duke Paul, to whom he was first governor, being finished, the Empress, among other rewards for this service, gave him seven thousand peasants, while the aides-de-camp, secretaries, and others employed by Count Panin as his assistants, were totally unnoticed by her. Panin immediately divided among them the seven thousand peasants; and I have seen several officers who are still rich with the boon. This generous action should not, however, lead us to forget that the two principal measures of his administration were marked with misfortune: the exchange of Holstein for six ships, which Denmark never gave; and the first division of Poland, which excited a craving for the remainder.

vants, musicians, private secretaries, and even tutors of their children, defrayed out of some public fund of which they had the control. Some few among them sought for talents, and appeared to esteem merit; but neither talents nor merit acquired a fortune under their protection, or partook of their wealth; partly from the avarice of those patrons, but still more from their total want of decency and judgment. The only way of gaining their favour was by becoming their buffoon, and the only mode of turning it to account was by turning knave.

Thus, during this reign, almost every man in office, or who had credit at Court, was the favourite of fortune, and acquired riches and honours. At the galas given by the Empress, swarms of new-created counts and princes made their appearance, and that at a time when in France all titles were about to be abolished. If we except the Soltikofs, we shall find at this period no family of distinction taken into favour. To any other country this would have been no evil; but in Russia, where the rich nobility is the only class that has any education, and often any principles of honour, it was a serious calamity to the Empire. Besides, all these upstarts were so many hungry leeches, who must be fed with the best blood

of the State, and fattened with the hard earnings of the people. A frequent change of kings is often not burdensome to a State, to whom it still remains an inheritance; but a continual change of favourites and ministers, who must all load their hives before they depart, is enough to ruin any country but Russia. How many millions must it have cost to fill successively the rapacious maws of about a dozen peculiar favourites? How many to render rich and noble the Besborodkos, the Zavadofskys, the Markofs, and a too numerous list of others who might be named? Have not the Orlofs, the Potemkins, the Zubofs, acquired revenues greater than those of kings; and their underlings, agents in the sale of their signatures, and managers of their petty traffic, become more wealthy than the most successful merchants?<sup>1</sup>

With respect to the government of Catherine, it was as mild and moderate within the immediate circle of her influence as it was arbitrary and terrible at a

1 A work has fallen into my hands, entitled, "Life of Catherine II.," in which the author gives a statement of the sums obtained by the favourites. But how very defective is this estimate, and how much below the truth! How is it possible, indeed, to calculate the immense sums which have enriched the Orlofs, the Potemkins, and the Zubofs, favourites who had the same access to the treasury of the State as to their own private coffers?



distance. Whoever, directly or indirectly, enjoyed the protection of the favourite, exercised, wherever he was situated, the most undisguised tyranny. He insulted his superiors, trampled on his inferiors, and violated justice, order and the *ukases*,<sup>1</sup> with impunity.

It is to the policy first, and next to the weakness of Catherine, that the relaxed and disorganised state of her internal government must, in part, be attributed; though the principal cause will be found in the depraved manners and character of the nation. How was a woman to effect that which the active discipline of the cane and the sanguinary axe of Peter I. were inadequate to accomplish? The usurper of a throne, which she was desirous to retain, she was under the necessity of treating her accomplices with kindness. A stranger in the Empire over which she reigned, she sought to remove everything discordant, everything heterogeneous, and to become one with the nation, by adopting and even flattering its tastes and its prejudices. She often knew how to reward, but never how to punish; and it was solely by suffering her power to be abused that she succeeded in preserving it.

She had two passions, which never left her but with her last breath—the love of man, which degene-

---

<sup>1</sup> Edicts of the Emperor.

rated into licentiousness; and the love of glory, which sank into vanity. By the first of these passions she was never so far governed as to become a Messalina, but she often disgraced both her rank and her sex; by the second she was led to undertake many laudable projects, which were seldom completed, and to engage in unjust wars, from which she derived at least that kind of fame which never fails to accompany success.

The generosity of Catherine, the splendour of her reign, the magnificence of her Court, her institutions, her monuments, her wars, were precisely to Russia what the age of Louis XIV. was to Europe; but, considered individually, Catherine was greater than this Prince. The French formed the glory of Louis; Catherine formed that of the Russians. She had not, like him, the advantage of reigning over a polished people; nor was she surrounded from infancy by great and accomplished characters. She had subtle ambassadors, not unskilled in the diplomatic art, and some fortunate generals; but, Romanzof, Panin and Potemkin excepted, she could not boast a single man of genius; for the wit, cunning and dexterity of certain of her ministers, the ferocious valour of a Suvarof, the ductile capacity of a Repnin, the favour of a Zubof, the readiness of a Besborodko, and the assiduity

of a Nicholas Soltikof, are not worthy of being mentioned as exceptions. It was not that Russia did not produce men of merit ; but Catherine feared such men, and they kept at a distance from her. We may conclude, therefore, that all her measures were her own, and particularly all the good she did.

Let not the misfortunes and abuses of her reign give to the private character of this Princess too dark and repulsive a shade! She appeared to be thoroughly humane and generous, as all who approached her experienced. All who were admitted to her intimacy were delighted with the good-natured sallies of her wit. All who lived with her were happy. Her manners were gay and licentious; but she still preserved an exterior decorum, and even her favourites always treated her with respect. Her love never excited disgust, nor her familiarity contempt. She might be deceived, won, seduced, but she would never suffer herself to be governed. Her active and regular life, her moderation, firmness, fortitude, and even sobriety, are moral qualities which it would be highly unjust to ascribe to hypocrisy. How great might she not have been, had her heart been as well governed as her mind! She reigned over the Russians less despotically than over herself; she was never hurried away

by anger, never a prey to dejection, and never indulged in transports of immoderate joy. Caprice, ill-humour and peevishness formed no part of her character, and were never perceived in her conduct. I will not decide whether she were truly great, but she was certainly beloved.<sup>1</sup>

Imbued from her youth with the corrupt maxims by which Courts are infected; enveloped on her throne in a cloud of incense, through which it was hardly possible for her to see clearly, it would be too severe

1 Many quatrains have been composed, either to serve as epitaphs or to be placed under the portrait of Catherine; but none have been struck off so happily, or describe her so truly, as the following. They are from the pens of two young Russians, the pleasant qualities of whose minds are enhanced by those of an admirable character and a generous heart: -

Elle fit oublier, par un esprit sublime,  
D'un pouvoir odieux, les énormes abus;  
Elle se maintint par ses vertus  
Sur un trône acquis par le crime.

Bless'd in her sway, her subjects might disown  
Th' unnumber'd evils of despotic rule;  
And tho' a crime had fixed her on the throne,  
She reign'd by precepts drawn from Virtue's school

The next is more flattering, but not inferior in merit:—

Dans le sein de la paix, au milieu de la guerre,  
À tous ses ennemis elle dicta la loi:  
Par ses talens divers elle étonna la terre,  
Écrivit comme un sage, et regna comme un roi.

Amid the train of Peace or din of War,  
Each foe appall'd her sov'reign will obey'd;  
Her mighty genius held the world in awe;  
Like sages wrote, like Jove the sceptre sway'd.

to apply at once the searching light of reason to her character, and try its defects by so strict an inquest. Let us judge her now as we would some twenty years ago, and consider Russia still, as to the people, as in the age of Charlemagne. The friends of liberty ought to render to Catherine the same justice as is rendered by all rational theologians to those great and wise men who did not enjoy the light of revelation. Her crimes were the crimes of her station; not of her heart. The terrible scenes of Ismail and of Prague appeared to her Court to be humanity itself. She needed, perhaps, only to be unfortunate to have possessed the purest virtues; but the unvaried prosperity of her arms dazzled and corrupted her. Vanity, that unfortunate rock, so fatal to every female, was her great failing; and her reign will ever bear the distinguishing characteristic of her sex.

Meanwhile, in whatever light she is considered, she will ever be placed in the first rank among those who, by their genius, their talents, and especially their success, have attracted the admiration of mankind. Her sex, giving a bolder relief to the great qualities she displayed on the throne, will place her above all the examples of real history; and the fabulous ages of an Isis and a Semiramis must be resorted to to find

a woman who has executed, or rather undertaken, such daring projects.

The ten last years of her reign carried her power, her glory, and, perhaps, her political crimes, to their height. When the great Frederick, dictator of the Kings of Europe, died, she was left the senior Sovereign, the eldest of the crowned heads of the Continent of Europe; and, if we except Joseph and Gustavus, all those heads taken together were unequal to her own; for she surpassed them as much in understanding as she exceeded them in the extent of her territories. If Frederick was the dictator of these Kings, Catherine became their tyrant. It was then that the end of that political thread by which poor Europe had been moved like a puppet, and which had escaped from France to Berlin, and from Berlin to Vienna, became fixed in the hands of a woman who drew it as she pleased. The immense Empire, an Empire almost of romance, which she had subjected to her sway; the inexhaustible resources she derived from a country and a people as yet in a state of infancy; the extreme luxury of her Court, the barbarous pomp of her nobility, the wealth and princely grandeur of her favourites, the glorious exploits of her armies, and the gigantic views of her ambition, threw Europe

into a sort of fascinating admiration ; and those Monarchs, who had been too proud to pay each other even the slightest deference, found no humiliation in making a lady the arbiter of their interests, the ruling power of all their measures.

But the French Revolution, so unfriendly to sovereigns in general, was particularly so to Catherine. The blaze which suddenly emerged from the bosom of France as from the crater of a burning volcano, poured a stream of light upon Russia, vivid as that of lightning ; and injustice, crimes and blood were seen where before all was grandeur, glory and virtue. Catherine trembled with fear and indignation. The French, those sweet heralds of her fame, those flattering and brilliant historians, who were one day to transmit to posterity the wonders of her reign, were suddenly transformed into so many inexorable judges, at whose aspect she shuddered. The phantoms of her imagination were dispelled. That Empire of Greece she was so desirous of reviving, those laws she would have established, that philosophy she intended to inculcate, and those arts which she had patronized, became odious in her sight. As a crowned philosopher, she valued the sciences so far only as they appeared the instruments for disseminating her glory. She

wished to hold them as a dark lantern in her hand; to make use of their light as should suit her convenience; to see without being seen. But when they dazzled her all at once with their bright emanations, she wished to extinguish them. She who had been the friend and disciple of the French speculative writers,<sup>1</sup> now wished to be re-enveloped in the ages of barbarism, but her wishes were vain, the light was not to be resisted; if she composed herself to sleep on laurels, she awoke on the carcasses of the dead; Glory, which in illusion she embraced, was changed in her arms into one of the Furies, and the Legislatrix of the North, forgetting her own maxims and philosophy, was no longer anything more than an old sibyl. Her dastardly favourites, everywhere pointing out to her in this event, Brutuses, Jacobins, and incendiaries, succeeded in filling up the measure of her suspicions and terrors. Her delirium was

---

1 Upon the breaking out of the Revolution, Catherine ordered the bust of Voltaire to be taken from the gallery, and thrown among the lumber. She had requested a bust of Fox at the period when, at the head of the British Opposition, he prevented by his exertions the Government of his country from declaring war against Russia. When this same Fox, however, opposed with equal strenuousness a war with France, this bust also, which a year before she had so highly honoured, was served in the same manner as Voltaire's.



even carried so far that, on a King who extended his prerogatives, and a nobility that ameliorated its government, she bestowed the appellations of rebels and traitors; the Poles were treated as Jacobins, because they had not the misfortune to be Russians.<sup>1</sup>

Had Catherine been asked, when her mind was calm, if she had not herself considerably advanced and helped to strengthen this Revolution, what would she have answered? Yet such is the fact: since, if she had not been so eager to seize upon the unfortunate country of the Poles, and afterwards to raise dissensions in Prussia and Sweden, she would not have disgusted, as she did, all Europe and the combination of Princes; Prussia would not have been induced so speedily to make peace, that it might be at leisure to watch her proceedings; nor would she have excited the indignation of Spain, by employing against a Catholic King and a Catholic nobility the same arms and the same insults as were employed against the

---

<sup>1</sup> The Americans, even at this epoch, became hateful to Catherine. She condemned a revolution which she had formerly pretended to admire, called Washington a rebel, and said publicly that a man of honour could not wear the Order of Cincinnatus. Accordingly Langeron, and some other emigrants, who had been invested with this Order, immediately renounced it, and were seen wearing it no longer.

French. In this view, France may erect a statue to her memory; for she has rendered the system of the enemies of that country odious and absurd to all monarchs; and has done the Republic the same service as demagogues have by their enormities, and ministers by their intrigues.

Catherine never effectually patronized letters in the states of her Empire. It was the reign of Elizabeth that had encouraged them; and it was distinguished by many productions worthy of proving to Europe that the Russians may lay fair claim to every species of excellence.<sup>1</sup> Catherine, indeed, purchased a few libraries and collections of pictures, pensioned a few flatterers, flattered a few celebrated men, who might be instrumental in spreading her fame, and readily sent a medal or a snuff-box to a German writer who dedicated some hyperbolic work

---

1 The author of these Memoirs may, perhaps, one day possess the requisite materials, and the leisure and tranquillity, for exhibiting to his countrymen a view of Russian literature. They will be astonished to find how nearly, in delicacy of wit, as well as in sentiment, sprightliness, and taste, it resembles their own. The Russian theatre is particularly formed upon that of the French. Government, manners and language are the only things in which the two nations strikingly differ from each other.

to her; but it was necessary to have come from some distance to please her, and to have acquired a great name to be entitled to her suffrage, and particularly to obtain any recompense. Genius might be born at her feet without being noticed,<sup>1</sup> and still more without being encouraged; yet, jealous of every kind of fame, and especially of that which Frederick the *Unique* had obtained by his writings, she was desirous of becoming an author, that she might share in it. She accordingly wrote her celebrated *Instructions for a Code of Laws*; several moral tales and allegories for the education of her grand-children; and a number of dramatic pieces and proverbs, which were acted and admired at the Hermitage. Her great undertaking, of which she was so vain, of collecting a number of words from three hundred different languages, and forming them into a dictionary, was never executed.

Of all her writings, her letters to Voltaire are certainly the best. They are even more interesting than those of the old philosophical courtier himself,

---

<sup>1</sup> Many architects, painters, sculptors, mechanics, and other artists of great talents, lived and died in obscurity and wretchedness, merely because they were Russians. Their names can only be found in certain topographical descriptions, or the accounts of foreign travellers, by whom more justice has been done them than by their own country.

who sold her watches and knitted stockings for her;<sup>1</sup> and who repeats in his letters the same ideas and compliments in a hundred different forms, and excites her continually to drive the Turks out of Europe, instead of advising her to render her own subjects free and happy. If the Code of Laws drawn up by Catherine bespeak a mind capable of enlarged views and a sound policy, her letters announce the wit, graces, and talents of a woman of still greater merit, and lead us to regret the means by which she obtained the acquisition of her power.

When she published her Instructions,<sup>2</sup> all Europe resounded with her applause, and bestowed upon her already the title of Legislatrix of the North. Catherine ordered deputies to be assembled from the different nations of her vast empire; but it was only that they might hear this celebrated performance read, and that

---

1 This he says himself in one of his letters to her.

2 It is known that her Instructions for a Code came under the *index expurgatorius*, and was prohibited in France. Catherine and Voltaire joined in railing at this proceeding. Who would have thought that, twenty years after, all French publications whatever would be proscribed in Russia, and that a lieutenant of police of the very same Catherine would confiscate at St. Petersburg, in the shop of Gay, the bookseller, *L'Avis au Peuple, par Tissot*, "Tissot's Advice to the People"; alleging that the people wanted no advice, and that it was a dangerous book?

she might receive their compliments ; for as soon as this was done, they were all sent back to their distant homes, some in disgrace for their firmness, others decorated with medals for their servility. The manuscript was deposited in a magnificent case, to be exhibited to the curiosity of strangers. A sort of committee was nominated to reduce these laws into form ; and if a favourite or minister had any dependent for whom he wished to provide, or any buffoon whom he wanted to maintain free of expense, he was appointed a member of this committee, whence he derived a salary.<sup>1</sup> Yet all Europe vociferated that Russia had laws, because Catherine had written a preface to a Code, and had subjected a hundred different people to the same system of slavery.<sup>2</sup>

Among the dramatical pieces that were composed

---

1 The author of these Memoirs knew, among other personages, one Mitrophanus Popof, a buffoon, bigot, and interpreter of dreams to a lady of the Court, who was a member of this committee ; he had never heard of the Instructions for a Code, and was unable to read it.

2 The Instructions for a Code is so literally taken from Montesquieu and Beccaria, that M. F—— de B——, who undertook to translate it, thought he could not do better than copy the text of these celebrated writers. The curious may be satisfied of this fact by examining the translation, which was printed for Grasset, at Lausanne. I had my information from this respectable man himself.

by her,<sup>1</sup> and which she caused to be acted in the theatres of St. Petersburg, one was of a new kind ; it was neither tragedy, nor comedy, nor opera, nor play, but an assemblage of all sorts of scenes, and entitled *Oleg* (a historical representation). Upon the celebration of the last peace with the Turks, it was got up by her direction with extraordinary pomp and the most magnificent decorations, and upwards of seven hundred performers appeared upon the stage. The subject is wholly taken from Russian history, and comprises an entire epoch. In the first act, Oleg lays the foundation of Moscow. In the second, he is at Kief, where he marries his pupil, Igor, and settles him on the throne. The ancient ceremonies observed upon the marriage of the Tzars, gave an opportunity of introducing some amusing scenes, and the national dances and sports which are exhibited, furnish many charming pictures. Oleg then sets out upon an expedition against the Turks ; we see him file off with

---

1 They are written in Russ. M. Derjavin, secretary to the Empress, and known by some other works, was considered as the maker, or at least the mender of them. It is certain, however, that she never had about her a man capable of writing her letters to Voltaire in French. Odart and Aubri, her secretaries at the time, did not write so well as herself. She was unquestionably the author.

his army, and embark. In the third act, he is at Constantinople. The Emperor Leof, obliged to sign a truce, receives this barbarian hero with the greatest magnificence. He is seen feasting at his table, while some troops of young Greeks, boys and girls, sing a chorus to his praise, and exhibit before him the ancient dances of Greece. The next scenic decoration represents the hippodrome, where Oleg is entertained with the spectacle of the Olympic games. Another theatre is then erected at the bottom of the stage, and some scenes from Euripides are played before the Court. At length Oleg takes leave of the Emperor, fastening his shield to a pillar in testimony of his visit, and to invite his successors to return one day to Constantinople, in imitation of his example.

The piece is truly Russian, and particularly emblematical of the character of Catherine; her favourite projects are represented in it, and the design of subjugating Turkey is alluded to, even when celebrating a peace with that country. Properly speaking, the performance is nothing more than a magic lantern, exhibiting different objects in succession to the eyes of the beholder; but to me such exhibitions, in which the great events of history are introduced as in a picture on the stage, are more interesting than the

strainings of the throat of our opera singers, and the amorous intrigues of some of our tragedies.

Catherine was neither fond of poetry nor of music, and she often confessed it. She could not endure the noise of the orchestra between the acts of a play, and she commonly silenced it. This defect of taste and feeling in a woman who appeared in other respects so happily constituted, is astonishing, yet may serve to explain how, with so extraordinary a capacity and genius, she could become so obdurate and sanguinary. At her palace of Tauris, she constantly dined with the two pictures of the sacking of Otchakof and Ismail before her eyes, in which Casanova has represented, with a most hideous accuracy, the blood flowing in streams, the limbs torn from the bodies and still palpitating, the demoniac fury of the murderers, and the convulsive agonies of the murdered. It was upon these scenes of horror that her attention and imagination were fixed while Gasparini and Mandini displayed their vocal powers, or Sarti conducted a concert in her presence.

This same Empress, who wrote plays herself, who admired Ségur for his wit and heard him sometimes repeat his verses, who had the most ridiculous farces played before her by her old courtiers, and particularly



by Count Stackelberg<sup>1</sup> and the Austrian minister,<sup>2</sup> recalled and disgraced one of her own ministers, because he wrote his despatches facetiously, made pleasant French verses, had composed a tragedy, and was desirous of illustrating the genius of his country by publishing historical eulogies of the great men of Russia. This was Prince Beloselsky, envoy at the

1 In the little societies of Catherine, all sorts of frolics and gambols were played. The old gouty courtiers were seen making their whimsical efforts to frisk and caper; and the Grand Duke Constantine one day actually broke the arm of the feeble Count Stackelberg, by rudely jostling against him, and throwing him down. Heretofore, Ségur had acted a part in those societies unworthy of his rank and understanding. Among the verses he wrote in compliment to the Empress, the following, which are the epitaph of a dog, have often been cited, and merit to be preserved. They are in the true spirit of French gallantry:—

Pour prix de sa fidélité,

Le ciel, témoin de sa tendresse,

Lui devoit l'immortalité,

Pour qu'elle fût toujours auprès de sa maîtresse.

Her fond fidelity Heav'n saw, and priz'd,

And to reward her tenderness bestow'd

The precious gift to live immortaliz'd,

Enjoying still her mistress's abode.

2 No ambassador, perhaps, was ever so long at a Court, and upon such good terms, as Cobentzel at the Court of Russia. He had been sent originally by Maria Theresa, and was afterwards confirmed in his office by all her successors. He was of a mean and unwieldy figure, but had a considerable share of wit, and of that peculiar sort in particular that is pleasing to women. He was for ten years the assiduous admirer of the charming Princess Dolgoruka, and Catherine delighted in his society. He

Court of Turin, a man of taste and merit, who had expended a fortune in patronizing the arts, and much of his time in cultivating them himself.<sup>1</sup>

If we except the travels of the celebrated Pallas, the historical researches of the industrious Müller, and some other works upon natural history, no literary production worthy of being noticed has distinguished Russia during the reign of Catherine.<sup>2</sup> Natural history

---

had a rage for theatricals, and accordingly plays were often got up at his house, in which he acted a part, and acquitted himself well. At the age of nearly sixty, he was absurd enough to take regular lessons in singing; and often, when a courier arrived with some important intelligence from Vienna—some defeat, perhaps—he was found before his mirror, practising his part, disguised as the Countess of Escarbagnas, of Croupillac, &c. The unfavourable despatches which he was continually receiving during the war, did not interrupt the entertainments, balls and plays that were regularly given at his house. When news arrived of a French victory, it was jestingly said, "Well, well, we shall have a ball on Saturday at the ambassador's." Catherine, enraged at this dramatic mania, one day said, "You will find that he reserves his best piece for the news of the entrance of the French into Vienna."

<sup>1</sup> He is known by several poetical productions, and particularly by an "Epistle to the French," in which he appears to be a Frenchman himself; and Voltaire wrote him a very flattering letter, and paid him the same compliment which he had paid before to the celebrated author of the "Epistle to Ninon."

<sup>2</sup> It is the same Müller who wrote so judicious a critique of the pretended History of Peter I., and of whom Voltaire said, "He is a German: I wish him more wit, and fewer consonants." Voltaire was astonished that the Russians should pretend to

and mathematics are the only sciences which the Russians have contributed in some measure to advance; and even those, however trifling, have been by the help of Germans<sup>1</sup>; yet no country is so fortunately situated for rendering the sciences the most essential services. Natural and ancient history might expect from her the most astonishing discoveries. The ruins of twenty cities attest that Tartary and Mongolia were once inhabited by polished nations, and the monuments which are still being discovered would have realized the sublime conceptions of Buffon and Bailli. Whole libraries have been discovered under the ruins

---

know their own names, and the names of their towns, better than the dictionary of Martiniene, and should complain at seeing them crippled. He persisted in writing Roumanou, Schouvalou, &c., instead of Romanof and Schuvalof. He would never write the Russian names as they were pronounced; yet, to show us that he was acquainted with a single Chinese one, he had often the affectation to write Confutzée where we should say Confucius.

1 Many celebrated men of letters in Germany, as Klinger for instance, who has a bold and caustic mind, and Kotzebue, a dramatic author whose plagiarisms often disgrace his talents, wrote in Russia; but they took care, particularly the former, how they published their works in that country. Kotzebue, however, deserved to be pardoned, for his good performances, for the sake of his "Langhans," a bad imitation of "Candide," and his translation of the works of Derjavin, and his flight to Paris. The topographical and statistical works of the elegant Storch would also have merited an exception, had he dared to publish them as they were written.

of Ablai-Kitt, and amid the ruinous heaps that skirt the Irtish. Thousands of manuscripts in unknown languages, and many others in the language of the Chinese, the Kalmucs, and the Mantschoux, are perishing in the mouldy, deserted cabinets of the academy: had they remained under the ruins till a government or people less barbarous had brought them to light, they would have been better preserved.

The best history of Russia is certainly that of Lévêque. Catherine detested this work as much as she did that of the Abbé Chappe; and she bestowed the most extraordinary pains, scrutinising the ancient chronicles that she might discover in this estimable historian some blunders and mistakes: because he had the courage (it is now twenty years ago) to point out the murderer of Peter III. and of Ivan. In other respects, Lévêque has merited the thanks of the Russian nation; for he is the only writer who, by his talents, labour and perseverance, has succeeded in rendering a history, so disgusting and detached as is that of Russia till the reign of Peter I., in some degree interesting to foreigners.<sup>1</sup> But who will one

---

<sup>1</sup> Those who would attempt to surpass him, instead of badly criticising his work as Leclerc has done, should reside ten years in Russia, learning the language, studying the manners, consulting

day worthily write the history of Catherine?<sup>1</sup> In our days, history has hitherto been a collection only of chosen events, artfully wrought up so as to give relief to a few individuals, and form a picture that shall be striking to the eye. Facts that admit of no dispute are pearls and garnets, which the historian selects at his pleasure, and threads on a black string or a white, as shall best suit the complexion of his work; truth never appears but when it is convenient. Even the author of the History of Charles XII., of Peter I., and of the Age of Louis XIV. was of opinion that it was of greater importance to say things useful than things that are true, as if what was false could ever be useful! And in a letter to Count Schuvalof, he

---

the ancient annals of the country, the histories of Talischef, of Prince Scherbatof, and especially the immense materials left by Müller, Bachmeister, &c.

1 This will be some Russian, and I know one or two competent to the task: but he must quit his country to write it. Meanwhile a foreigner, ignorant of persons, manners and places may collect together some historical traits, give them a form half-real, half-fabulous, and call his work a "History of Catherine II." But this will be no history. Were the Emperor of China the subject such accounts might satisfy me. However, the anonymous author to whom I allude has obtained, respecting certain epochs, some good materials; but if those from whom he received them had read the work before it was printed, fewer errors, as to persons, places and dates, would be found in it.

says, "Waiting till I have *leisure to methodize the terrible event of the death of the Tzarevitch*, I have begun another work." Is this the language of a historian and philosopher? Alas! if you have not the courage to assert the truth, why do you not abandon the pen of history? It is in a tragedy only, or an epic poem, that the license can be pardoned, of *arranging a terrible event*. The end of history is not to celebrate an individual, but to instruct the people, and give a lesson to governments.

Previous to the death of Catherine, the monuments of her reign resembled already so many wrecks and dilapidations: codes, colonies, education, establishments, manufactories, edifices, hospitals,<sup>1</sup> canals, towns, fortresses, everything had been begun, and everything given up before it was finished. As soon as a project entered her head, all preceding ones gave place, and her thoughts were fixed on that alone, till a new idea arose to draw off her attention. She abandoned her

---

1 One hospital, however, founded by Catherine, deserves to be mentioned as a characteristic establishment. It is destined for the reception of fifty ladies infected with a certain disease. No question is asked, either as to the name or quality of those who present themselves, and they are treated with equal care, respect, and discretion. This last word is even marked on the linen appointed for their use.

code to drive the Turks out of Europe. After the glorious peace of Kainardgi, she appeared for awhile to attend to the interior administration of her affairs, but all was presently forgotten, that she might be Queen of Tauris. Her next project was the re-establishment of the throne of Constantine: to which succeeded that of humbling and punishing the King of Sweden. Afterwards the invasion of Poland became her ruling passion; and so imperiously did it fascinate her, that a second Pugatshef might have arrived at the gates of St. Petersburg without inducing her to relinquish her hold. She died, still meditating the destruction of Sweden, the ruin of Prussia, and mortified at the success of French republicanism. Thus was she incessantly led away by some new passion still stronger in its influence than the preceding one, and thus neglected her government, both in its whole and its parts.

Medals have been struck in honour of numerous buildings which have never yet been constructed; and, among others, the marble church, which, undertaken some twenty years ago, is still on the stocks. The shells of other edifices, which have never been finished, appear like so many ruins; and St. Petersburg is encumbered with the rubbish of a variety of large mansions fallen to decay before they have been inhabited. The

projectors and architects have pocketed the money; and Catherine, having the plan or medal in her cabinet, concluded the undertaking to be finished, and thought of it no more.

The St. Petersburg Almanac gives a list of upwards of two hundred and forty towns founded by Catherine—a number inferior, perhaps, to what have been destroyed by her armies; but these towns are merely so many paltry hamlets, that have changed their name and quality by an *immennoi ukase*, or supreme order of Her Imperial Majesty: some of them even are nothing more than posts driven into the ground, containing their name, and delineating their site; yet, without waiting till they shall be finished, and particularly till they shall be peopled, they figure on the map as if they were the capitals of so many provinces.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 Catherine built, at an enormous expense, near Tzarsko-selo, the town of Sophaia, the boundaries of which are immense; but the houses are already tumbling down, and have never been inhabited. If such be the lot of a town placed immediately before her eyes, what must be the fate of those cities founded by her in the remote deserts? But the most absurd town that exists is unquestionably that of Gatshina, of which Paul has the honour to be founder. These personages look upon men as storks, who are caught by placing a wheel on the top of a house, or on a belfry. But all these forced erections, from the superb Potsdam to the contemptible Gatshina, tend to prove that the real founders of cities are cultivation, commerce, and freedom.



Prince Potemkin has actually built some towns, and constructed some ports, in the Crimea. They are fine cages, but they have no birds; and such as might be allured thither would shortly die of chagrin if they had not the power of flying away. The Russian Government is subjugating and oppressive; the Russian character warlike and desolating. Tauris, since it was conquered, has become a desert.<sup>1</sup>

This mania of Catherine to sketch everything and complete nothing, drew from Joseph II. a very shrewd

---

1 A friend of mine, a man of learning, was travelling in Tauris, under the protection of Government, for the purpose of investigating the country. One day he arrived at the habitation of a Tartar, who led a patriarchal life, and treated him with becoming hospitality. My friend, perceiving that his host was dejected, asked him the cause of his sadness. "Alas! I have great reason," said he. "May I not be permitted to know it?"—"The Russian soldiers, who are in the neighbourhood, come every day and cut down my fruit-trees, that serve me both for shade and nourishment, to burn them; and shortly my bald head will be exposed to the burning heat of the sun."—"Why do you not complain of this treatment to their chief?"—"I have done so."—"Well?"—"He told me that I should be paid two roubles a foot for such as they had already cut down, *and the same for as many as they may cut down hereafter.* But I do not want their money. Ah! let me at least die in peace under the shadow of the trees which my fathers have planted! or if this cannot be, then must I follow my unhappy brethren, and flee my country, as they have been compelled to do before me." And the tears trickled down the beard of this venerable patriarch.

and satirical remark. During his travels in Tauris, he was invited by her to place the second stone of a town, of which she had herself, with great parade, laid the first. On his return, he said, "I have finished in a single day a very important business with the Empress of Russia: she has laid the first stone of a city, and I have laid the last."

Of all the monuments erected by her at St. Petersburg that will remain as long as they shall not be swallowed up by the swamps, are the superb quay of the Neva, and the equestrian statue of Peter I.<sup>1</sup> The last, however beautiful, is greatly inferior to the accounts which hyperbolical travellers have given of it. The following verse from Delille may be applied to it :—

Du haut d'un vrai rocher, sa demeure sauvage,  
La nature se rit de ces rocs contrefaits.

On a wild rock Nature contemptuous sits,  
And laughs to scorn these idle counterfeits.

---

1 D'Orbeil addressed some verses to Catherine, in which was the following handsome quatrain :—

C'est par tes soins que le bronze respire  
Sur ce rocher de Thétis aperçu,  
Et que le Tzar découvre son empire  
Plus vaste encore qu'il ne l'avait conçu.  
'Twas thou that bid yon rock-built statue's pride  
In breathing bronze o'erlook the distant main  
Surveying hence his realms extended wide,  
The Tzar still wonders at his vast domain.

The idea of placing the great Tzar upon a stupendous and rugged rock, over which he had climbed, was certainly new and sublime; but it has been badly executed. The rock was brought from Finland to the banks of the Neva, with infinite labour; was twenty-one feet in height, forty in length, and covered with moss several inches thick, which must have long been accumulating. It was deprived of its wild and primitive form to give it a more regular appearance; and, what with hewing and polishing, was at last reduced in size nearly one-half, so that it is now a little rock under a great horse; and the Tzar, who ought to be surveying from it his Empire, more vast even than he had conceived, is hardly able to look into the first floor of the neighbouring houses. By another absurdity, Peter appears in the long Russian coat, which he particularly disliked, and obliged his subjects to quit and to shorten. If this statue had a pedestal proportionate to its size, it would be an admirable performance.

A picture of St. Petersburg and its manners under the reign of Catherine, written in the spirit of the "Picture of Paris," by the penetrating Mercier, would be a most interesting performance. But this, like all works of genius, has produced none but bad imitations, from the complete and perfect description of

Berlin by Nicolai, to that which a Professor Georgi has given to St. Petersburg: they are all, too, as poor in ideas, and as destitute of utility, as they are replete with minuteness and detail. Count Anhalt has given in the same way a description of the Imperial House of the Cadets, of which he was director-general, in which he tells us how many staircases, stairs, windows, doors and chimneys there are in this immense building. This may do well for a person desirous to contract for the cleaning of this edifice; but what instruction does it convey to the public?<sup>1</sup>

M. Storch, an industrious and well-informed young man, a Livonian, has published a work, under the title of a "Picture of St. Petersburg," which ought not to be confounded with the insignificant ones of which I have been speaking; but it resembles St. Petersburg as the portrait of Lampi resembled Catherine: it is too much in the Chinese mode, and without shadings, as he himself presented it. Storch, however, only wanted one

---

1 This description of St. Petersburg is even erroneous in its details. The author of these Memoirs has the honour of being mentioned in it among the literary characters then resident in the city; but, by a strange confusion of names, titles and works, General Melissino, Major M—— and his brother are made one and the same personage; yet the writer was actually at St. Petersburg, and knew these men. After this, what faith can be placed in descriptions?

thing to render it perfect: an opportunity of writing it in any other country than Russia. He dedicated it to Catherine, who rewarded the author for his flattering delineations; but she afterwards expressed her dissatisfaction at his having adopted the French characters, when writing in German his "Statistical Pictures," another work which gives some very accurate information as to the political state of Russia.

St. Petersburg, some parts of which are singularly magnificent and beautiful, does not badly resemble the sketch of a grand picture, in which are already delineated a face similar to that of the Apollo Belvidere, and an eye such as would be given to Genius, while the rest is a chaos of unfinished strokes or of dotted lines.

As St. Petersburg is inhabited by colonies of different nations, nothing can be more heterogeneous than its manners and customs; and, in general, it is difficult to ascertain what is the prevailing taste or fashion. The French tongue serves as the connecting tie between these various people, but many other languages are equally spoken. If a company be numerous, you will find in turn three languages used—the Russian, the French, and the German; and it is not uncommon, in the same society, to hear Greeks, Italians, English,

Hollanders and Asiatics, all conversing in their own dialect.

In St. Petersburg, the Germans are artists and mechanics, particularly tailors and shoemakers; the English, saddlers and merchants; the Italians, architects, singers and vendors of images; but it is difficult to say what the French are. The greater part change their occupation every year: one arrives a lackey, is made *outshitel* (a tutor), and becomes a counsellor; others have been seen actors, managers, shopkeepers, musicians and officers in turn. There is no place so convenient as St. Petersburg for observing how inconstant, enterprising, ingenious and adapted for everything is the French character.

To ascertain the manners and customs of each nation distinctly, you must see them in their houses—in the street they all appear like Russians. The French play off their witticisms, sup gaily, and sing some old ballads of their country, which they have not forgotten; the English dine at five o'clock, drink punch and talk of commerce; the Italians practise music, dance, make grimaces and gestures, and the subjects of their conversation are the theatres and the arts; in the houses of the Germans you talk of science, smoke, dispute, eat heartily, and more than

you like, from the abundance of their compliments; in those of the Russians, you have everything indiscriminately, and especially gaming, which is the soul of their parties and pleasures, but it does not exclude any of the other amusements. A foreigner, and particularly a Frenchman, after winding along the inhospitable shores of Prussia, and traversing the wild and uncultivated plains of Livonia, is struck with astonishment and rapture at finding again, in the midst of a vast desert, a large and magnificent city, in which the sociality, amusements, arts and luxury abound, which he had supposed nowhere to exist but in Paris.

In a climate like that of St. Petersburg, where there are scarcely a few weeks of fine weather during the whole year, and under a Government like that of Russia, where politics, morals and literature are excluded, the pleasures of society must be very contracted, and the enjoyments of domestic life proportionably increased. The luxury, however, and studied conveniences, the splendour and good taste of the apartments, the profusion and delicacies of the table, the cheerfulness and frivolity of the conversation, repay the man of pleasure for the constraint in which nature and the Government hold both his

body and his mind. Of balls and entertainments there is an infinite succession; and every day he is probably invited to some feast where he finds in a spacious house *chefs-d'œuvre* of all the arts, and the productions of every country brought together; and frequently, even in the midst of winter, the gardens, the fruits and flowers of spring.

Tzarsko-selo is an immense and dreary palace, begun by Anne, finished by Elizabeth, inhabited by Catherine and forsaken by Paul. Its situation is a swamp, the country around it a desert, and the gardens are dull and wearisome. The monuments with which it has been adorned by Catherine, like the buildings at St. Petersburg, are so many emblems of her character. By the side of obelisks, rostral columns and triumphal arches, erected to the Orlofs, Romanzofs and Russian warriors, who subjected the Archipelago, and for a moment reconquered Macedon, are seen tombs consecrated to some of her favourite dogs; and not far from these is the mausoleum erected to the amiable Lanskoï, the most beloved of her favourites and the only one whom death tore from her embraces. These are records certainly of very different services most familiarly placed together.



Are we, from this, to imagine that a dog, a lover, and a hero, were of equal importance in the eyes of the imperial Catherine ? These monuments, however, will shortly disappear in the dreary swamps which serve for their foundation.

The Egyptians, who obliged the people they conquered to labour, and the Romans, who stripped every nation to embellish Rome, executed some immense works. The free Greeks distinguished themselves by the taste and elegance, rather than the magnitude, of their buildings ; and Russia was lately the only state that could undertake those astonishing edifices which we so much admire in antiquity ; because in Russia the men are slaves, and, as in Egypt, cost only a few onions. It is for this reason we see in Moscow and St. Petersburg such gigantic edifices. Meanwhile, there is not so much as a road to unite these two capitals, which are only distant about two hundred leagues from each other. This, also, was one of the abortive projects of Catherine ; for the road she began is an incumbrance, and renders travelling still more tiresome and impracticable than before. But Catherine preferred expending two or three millions of roubles in building a gloomy marble palace for her favourite to the forming a road.

This latter was too common an undertaking for her genius.<sup>1</sup>

O Catherine ! dazzled by thy greatness, of which I have had a near view, charmed with thy beneficence, which rendered so many individuals happy, seduced by the thousand amiable qualities that have been admired in thee, I would fain have erected a monument to thy glory ; but torrents of blood flow in upon me and inundate my design ; the chains of thirty millions of slaves ring in my ears, and deafen me ; the crimes which have reigned in thy name call forth my indignation. I throw away my pen and exclaim, “ Let there be henceforth no glory without virtue ! Let injustice and depravity be transmitted with no other laurels to posterity than the snakes of Nemesis ! ”

---

<sup>1</sup> Paul, so far from finishing the most useful of those labours begun by his mother, as the quays, canals and high roads, has built, in his turn, churches and palaces, though there were already more than enough of both in St. Petersburg. But the monuments he has erected in greatest number, are houses for military exercise, barracks, guard-houses, and particularly sentry-boxes. Happily, however, all these constructions are of wood, and will hardly outlast their founder.

## CHAPTER III

## OF THE FAVOURITES

*Their office made a distinct place at Court—The Empress's generosity on this point—Installation of Zubof—List of the twelve who enjoyed in succession the title of Favourite—Little Hermitage—Little Society.*

ELIZABETH of England, Mary of Scotland, Christina of Sweden, all the Empresses of Russia, and most women who have been their own mistresses, have had favourites, or lovers. To consider this as a crime might be thought too rigid and ungallant. Catherine II. alone, however, availed herself of her power to exhibit to the world an example, of which there is to be found no model, by making the office of favourite a place at Court, with an apartment, salary, honours prerogatives, and, above all, its peculiar functions; and of all places there was not one the duties of which were so scrupulously fulfilled—a short absence, a temporary sickness, of the person by whom it was

occupied, was sometimes sufficient to occasion his removal. Nor, perhaps, was there any post in which the Empress displayed more choice and discernment : I believe no instance occurred of its having been filled by a person incapable of it ; and, except the interregnum between Lanskoï and Yermolof, it was never twenty-four hours vacant.

Twelve favourites succeeded each other in this place, which became the first of the State. Several of these favourites, confining themselves to the principal duty it presented, and having little merit except the performing that duty well, had scarcely any influence except within the immediate sphere of their peculiar department. Some, however, displayed ambition, audacity, and, above all, self-sufficiency ; obtained vast influence, and preserved an ascendancy over the mind of Catherine after having lost her heart ; while others continued to retain her friendship and gratitude, and, when dismissed from their personal attendance on the Empress, were thought worthy of serving the Empire in public offices.

It is a very remarkable feature in the character of Catherine, that none of her favourites incurred her hatred or her vengeance, though several of them offended her, and their quitting their office did not

depend on herself. No one was ever seen to be punished, no one to be persecuted. Those whom she discarded went into foreign countries to display her presents and dissipate her treasures, after which they returned to enjoy her liberalities with tranquillity in the bosom of their country, though their terrible mistress could have crushed them in a moment. In this respect Catherine certainly appears superior to all other women. Was it greatness of mind or defect of passion? Perhaps she never knew love; perhaps she still respected in her lovers the favours with which she had honoured them.

Soltikof, Orlof and Lanskoï, were all of whom she was deprived by death; the rest surviving her love, though they might have exposed her weaknesses, still possessed in quiet places or wealth, which rendered them objects of envy to the whole Empire. She contented herself with dismissing Korsakof, whom she surprised, even in her own apartments, with one of her maids-of-honour; and she resigned Momonof to a young rival. Assuredly these are very extraordinary features, and very rare in a woman, a lover, an Empress. This great and generous conduct is far removed from that of an Elizabeth of England, who cut off the heads of her favourites and her rivals;

and from a Christina of Sweden, who caused one of her lovers to be assassinated in her presence.

But Catherine, with all the genius and understanding which she evinced, notwithstanding the exterior decency she affected, must have thoroughly known and despised the Russians, since she ventured so frequently to place by her side young men taken from the people, and hold them up to receive the respect and homage of the whole nation, without any other title to this distinction than one for which she ought to have blushed. It will be sufficient to relate how Zubof, her last favourite, was installed, to show my indignant readers in what manner these affairs were managed.

Plato<sup>1</sup> Zubof was a young lieutenant in the horse-guards, patronized by Nicholas Soltikof, to whom he was a distant relation, and to whom my friend, who furnished me with part of these Memoirs, was at that time aide-de-camp. In this post he frequently found himself by the side of Zubof, and even sought this advantage at table. Zubof spoke French fluently, he had had some education, was of a polite and pliant disposition, could converse a little on literary subjects,

---

<sup>1</sup> This name led the courtiers to say, that Catherine ended with Platonic love.

and had learned music. He was of a middle size, but supple, muscular and well made. He had a high and intelligent forehead, and fine eyes, and his countenance had not that air of coldness and severity, mixed with vanity, which it afterwards assumed. When the Empress went to Tzarsko-selo in the spring of 1789, he solicited from his patron the favour of being appointed to command the detachment that attended her, and, having obtained it, dined with Catherine. The Court had scarcely arrived when the rupture with Momonof took place. This favourite was married and dismissed. Zubof was the only young officer in sight; and it appears that he was indebted rather to this fortunate circumstance than to the deliberate choice of Catherine, for the preference he obtained. Potemkin being absent, Nicholas Soltikof, at that time in high credit, introduced and served the young Zubof with so much the more zeal, hoping to find in him a protector against the haughty Potemkin, whom he heartily disliked. After some secret conferences in presence of the Mentor,<sup>1</sup> Zubof was approved, and sent for *more ample information* to Miss Protasof and the Empress's physician.<sup>2</sup> The account they gave

---

<sup>1</sup> He was governor to the Grand Dukes, and minister of war.

<sup>2</sup> Miss Protasof was called *l'éprouveuse*, from her functions. The physician to the Empress was Mr. Rogerson.

must have been favourable, for he was named aide-de-camp to the Empress, received a present of a hundred thousand roubles (£20,000) to furnish himself with linen, and was installed in the apartment of the favourites, with all the customary advantages. The next day, this young man was seen familiarly offering his arm to his Sovereign, equipped in his new uniform, with a large hat and feather on his head, attended by his patron and the great men of the Empire, who walked behind him with their hats off, though the day before he had danced attendance in their ante-chambers.

In the evening, after her card-party was over, Catherine was seen to dismiss her Court, and retire, accompanied only by her favourite.

Next day the ante-chambers of the new idol were filled with aged generals and ministers of long service, all of whom bent the knee before him. He was a genius discerned by the piercing eye of Catherine; the treasures of the Empire were lavished on him, and the conduct of the Empress was sanctioned by the meanness and shameful assiduities of her courtiers.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Zubof, being one day hunting, stopped, with his suite, on the road from St. Petersburg to Tzarsko-selo. The courtiers who were going to Court, the couriers, the post, all carriages, and all



Perhaps the reader may have some curiosity to peruse a list of those who enjoyed the title of favourite to Catherine, and who reigned over Russia more or less in the name of their august lover.

#### 1.—SERGIUS SOLTIKOF.

It is whispered that he received Catherine's first favours when she was only Grand Duchess, a happiness said to have been denied by nature to the unfortunate Peter III. Soltikof, beloved and happy, grew indiscreet, and excited jealousy. Elizabeth civilly banished him from Court, and he died in exile.<sup>1</sup>

#### 2.—STANISLAUS PONIATOFKY

Soon occasioned him to be forgotten. He was at that time Polish envoy at St. Petersburg. Handsome, gallant, and lively, he engaged the affections of the young Catherine. Peter III. sometimes interrupted them, though he was little addicted to jealousy, and preferred his pipe, his bottle, his soldiers, and his mistress to

---

the peasants were stopped. No one dared pass till the young man thought proper to quit the road, and he stayed on it more than an hour, waiting for his game.

1 Soltikof had all the wit, agreeableness, and vanity of a young Russian nobleman. He was the only one of Catherine's favourites that she selected from a powerful family. Her heart was not at that time guided by her politics.

his lovely wife. It is well known that Catherine, when seated on the imperial throne, rewarded her lover with the Crown of Poland. His disastrous reign evinced that Love, when it bestows a crown, is as blind as favour when it distributes places and honours. Stanislaus was the most amiable of men, but the weakest of kings. How was it possible that so pusillanimous a being should for a moment have gained the esteem of Europe? Yet by whom was he not admired? How contradictory was his conduct, compared with his sentiments and his language! At the last Diet, the generous Nuncio, Kamar, said to him, publicly, on perceiving him waver, "What, Sire! are you no longer the same who said to us, when signing the constitution of the 3rd of May, 'May my hand perish rather than it should subscribe anything contrary to this?' All Europe charges you with being Catherine's King; justify her, at least, for having put the sceptre into your hand, by showing that you are capable of wielding it."<sup>1</sup> Yet, but a few

---

<sup>1</sup> This brave Pole was interrupted in the midst of this spirited speech, and carried off by the Russian satellites, Rothenfeld and Pistor, worthy followers of the barbarous Kretschetnikof and Kakofsky. Heavens! what names! They who bore them were still more rugged; yet these were the two men who conquered Poland in one campaign, and overturned the constitution of the 3rd of May, which all the nation seemed to defend.

days after, the unworthy Stanislaus signed that compact which dismembered Poland for the second time, and by which he formally acknowledged himself factious and rebellious, for establishing a rational constitution, which gave to him, as King, more authority, and promised his nation more happiness and freedom.<sup>1</sup> If at this period he had, at least, abdicated his dignity, he would have excited regard. He was incapable either of remaining a King or of ceasing to be one; he had not even the wit and pride of Harlequin, who, when his antagonists were struggling to get from him his wooden sword, and he could defend it no longer, threw it on the ground, saying, "There, take it!" Stanislaus chose rather to drag on an old age of disgrace, and

---

<sup>1</sup> He did not sign, however, without reluctance. He said to Sievers, who summoned him to repair to Grodno, to head the Confederates, "I will never be guilty of such baseness. Let the Empress take back her crown; let her send me to Siberia, or leave me to go out of my kingdom on foot, with my staff in my hand—I will not dishonour myself." He was confined, kept fasting, threatened, and then placed himself at the head of the Confederacy. It was Colonel Stackelberg, nephew of Ingelstrøm, who finally brought him the treaty of partition. Stanislaus, on reading it, burst into tears, and said, "O, sir, take pity on me! Let me not be compelled to sign my own disgrace!" Stackelberg told him that, after this sacrifice, he might enjoy a happy and tranquil old age. Wiping his eyes, he replied, "Well, I will hope so," but, his niece entering, he again wept plentifully with her.

go and die at St. Petersburg in a state of humiliation.<sup>1</sup>

Of all the favourites of Catherine, Stanislaus was the only one whom she took pleasure in humbling, after having exalted. Loyalty and patriotism, which appeared for an instant to contend with gratitude and submission in the heart of the King, were crimes in the eye of the haughty Tzarina. She was indulgent in love, but implacable in politics; ambition was her ruling passion, yet she always made the lover subservient to the Empress.

### 3.—GREGORY ORLOF,

Who enjoyed such long and distinguished favour, and whose history is so intimately connected with that of Catherine, seemed to share with her the throne on which he had placed her.<sup>2</sup> He enjoyed all the power

---

<sup>1</sup> One Court day, after the accession of the present Emperor, Stanislaus, who was in his train, bending under age and fatigue, was obliged to sit down in a corner while three or four hundred courtiers were kissing the hand of Paul. The Emperor, perceiving that the old King had seated himself during this ceremony, sent an aide-de-camp to him, to order him to keep on his legs.

<sup>2</sup> If no mention be made of the revolution of 1762 in these Memoirs, it is because Europe is made sufficiently acquainted with it by the history left by Rhulière, which agrees in every point with what is universally known and believed at present. I have repeatedly

and honours united, which were afterwards seen to adorn Potemkin and burden Zubof. He had much of the haughtiness and firmness of Potemkin. Though he was young and robust, his brother Alexis, a Hercules in strength and Goliath in stature,<sup>1</sup> was associated with him in his office. The Empress was then in the bloom of life. She avowedly had a son by Gregory, who was named Basil Gregorievitch Bobrinsky, and educated in the corps of cadets; Admiral Ribas, then tutor to that corps, being afterwards appointed his governor.<sup>2</sup> Two pretty maids-of-honour, whom Protasof, first *femme-de-*

---

heard the particulars in Russia from persons who were actors in the business, and they were very nearly the same as those which I have since read in Rhulières.

1 It was this Alexis Orlof who, with Passick and Baratinsky, was concerned in the death of Peter III. He afterwards rendered himself famous by his expeditions in the Archipelago, and particularly by the battle of Tchesme, from which he received the surname of Tchesminsky. His infamy in carrying off from Italy a daughter of the Empress Elizabeth served to render him completely odious and execrable, in spite of his usurped laurels. He is at present banished to Germany, where he endeavours in vain to obtain notice by his luxury and expensive manner of living. He is avoided and detested.

2 This Bobrinsky strongly resembles his mother in the face, and whoever sees the head of Catherine on a rouble may see the likeness of her son. He has distinguished himself by his disorderly life, though he has sense, and is not devoid of information. He was banished to Esthonia, but Paul recalled him at his accession, and made him a major in the horse-guards. Not long after, however, he fell into disgrace.

*chambre*, educated as her nieces, are likewise reputed to be Catherine's daughters, by Orlof. It was for this celebrated favourite she erected the gloomy marble palace, the inscription on which informed all the world that it was erected by grateful friendship. In honour of him likewise she ordered a large medal to be struck, on occasion of the journey he took to Moscow to re-establish order, and being particularly instrumental in stopping the dreadful ravages of the plague. On this medal he is represented as Curtius, leaping into the gulf, with this inscription: "Russia, too, can boast such sons." The palace of Gatshina, now inhabited by Paul, is another monument to Prince Orlof. Twelve years' intimacy, added to the haughtiness of this lover, at length wearied his Sovereign, now firmly established on the throne; and, after a long contest, Potemkin bore off the laurel. The triumph of his rival, and the inconstancy of Catherine, whom he openly accused of ingratitude, had such an effect on him that his health was destroyed, his mind deranged, and the once proud, powerful, and magnificent Orlof died in the most horrible state of insanity and human infirmity.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 Many assert that Potemkin poisoned him with a herb, which possesses the quality of turning the brain, and which the Russians call *piannaia trava*, "drunkard's plant."

## 4.—VASSILTSCHIKOF,

Whom Panin introduced during an absence of Orlof, filled up the interval that took place between the two haughty rivals. He was merely the tool of Catherine's pleasures.

## 5.—POTEMKIN

Came one day, and boldly seized on the apartments of his predecessor; thus proclaiming his victory, by making himself master of the field of battle so long disputed against him. His love, his valour, and his colossal stature had charmed Catherine. He was the only one of her favourites who dared become enamoured of her, and to make the first advances. It appeared that he was truly and romantically captivated by her.<sup>1</sup> He first adored his Sovereign as a mistress, and then cherished

---

<sup>1</sup> There is a Russian song of his extant, beginning "Kaks-koroia tebe vidal," &c., which he composed when first in love. It breathes sentiment, and deserves to be translated. The following is the sense of what I recollect of it: "As soon as I beheld thee, I thought of thee alone; thy lovely eyes captivated me, yet I trembled to say I loved. To thee, Love subjects every heart, and enchains them with the same flowers. But, O heavens! what torment to love one to whom I dare not declare it! one who can, never be mine! Cruel gods! why have you given her such charms? or why did you exalt her so high? Why did you destine me to love her, and her alone? her whose sacred name will never pass my lips, whose charming image will never quit my heart," &c

her as his glory. These two great characters seemed formed for each other. Their affection was mutual, and when they ceased to love they still continued to esteem each other. Politics and ambition united them when Love had dissolved his bands.

I leave to travellers the office of describing the pomp of his entertainments, the laborious luxury of his house, and the value of his diamonds; and to German scribblers to relate how many bank-notes he had bound up as books in his library, and what he paid for the cherries, a plate of which he was accustomed to present every New Year's Day to his august Sovereign; or the cost of his sturgeon soup, which was his favourite dish; or how many hundred miles he would send a courier for a melon or a nosegay, to present to one of his mistresses.<sup>1</sup> They who wish to see a characteristic

---

<sup>1</sup> Potemkin had in his suite an officer of high rank, named Bauer, whom he sent sometimes to Paris for a dancer, then to Astrakan for a water-melon; now to Poland, to carry orders to his tenants; to St. Petersburg, to carry news to Catherine; or to the Crimea, to gather grapes. This officer, who thus spent his life travelling post, requested an epitaph to be ready for him in case he should break his neck, and one of his friends gave him the following:

“Cy git Bauer sous ce rocher:  
Fouette, cocher!”

“Here Bauer lies, beneath this stone:  
Coachman, drive on!”



portrait of him may find one, drawn in a superior manner, in the work entitled, "*Histoire de Catherine II.*"; as the particulars of Potemkin's life would carry me too far. Besides, one of my friends, who attended him in his campaigns, is at present employed on the subject, and is more capable of satisfying the curiosity of the public respecting this extraordinary man.

He created, destroyed, or confused, yet animated everything. When absent, he alone was the subject of conversation; when present, he engaged every eye. The nobles, who detested him, and who made some figure when he was with the army, seemed at his sight to sink into nothingness, and to be annihilated before him. The Prince de Ligne, who was his tale-bearer and flatterer,<sup>1</sup> said, "There is something barbarously romantic in his character"; and he spoke the truth. His death left an immense void in the Empire, and that death was as extraordinary as his life. He had spent nearly a year at St. Petersburg, indulging in all

---

<sup>1</sup> He told him, in one of his letters, which the Prince's vanity induced him to make no secret: "Your august and amiable Sovereign is indebted to you for more marks of gallantry than Louis XIV. was to all his courtiers together." The surmise, however, was wrong. The Duke de la Feuillade erected a superb statue to his master at his own expense. Potemkin never paid Catherine a compliment equal to this.

kinds of pleasure, and even debauchery, forgetting his glory, and displaying his wealth and influence with insulting pomp. He received the greatest men of the Empire as footmen, scarcely deigned to notice the Grand Duke, and sometimes entered Catherine's apartments with his legs bare, his hair about his ears, and in a morning gown. Old Marshal Repnin availed himself of his absence from the army to beat the Turks, and force them to demand peace, doing more in two months than Potemkin had done in three years. The latter, who wished still to prolong the war, was roused at the news, and set off;<sup>1</sup> but he carried death in his veins. On his arrival at Jassy, where his headquarters had long been established, or, to speak more properly, his capital and his Court, he was gloomy, melancholy, consumed with vexation, and impatient under his disease. He determined to wrestle with it, and over-

---

<sup>1</sup> His interview with Repnin was an amusing scene. "You little Martinist priest,"\* said he, "how dared you undertake so many things in my absence? Who gave thee any such orders?" Repnin, enraged at this speech, and emboldened by success, dared for once behave to him with firmness. "I have served my country," he answered; "my head is not at thy disposal, and thou art a devil whom I defy." Saying this, he went out of the room in a rage, shutting the door on Potemkin, who followed him with his clenched fist. The two heroes of Russia were within an ace of getting at loggerheads with each other.

\* Repnin was a zealous Martinist.

come it by his iron constitution; he laughed at his physicians, and ate salt meat and raw turnips. His disease grew worse; he would be conveyed to Otchakof, his beloved conquest, but he had scarcely advanced a few miles before the air of his carriage seemed to stifle him. His cloak was spread by the roadside; he was laid on it, and there expired in the arms of his niece, Branicki, who accompanied him. Catherine fainted three times when she heard of his death. It was necessary to bleed her; she was thought to be dying. She expressed almost as much grief as at the death of Lanskoï; but it was not the lover she regretted, it was the friend, whose genius was assimilated with her own, whom she considered as the support of her throne, and the executor of her vast projects. Catherine, holding a usurped sceptre, was a woman, and timid; she was accustomed to behold in Potemkin a protector, whose fortune and glory were intimately connected with her own. She appeared to feel herself again a stranger; she began to fear her son, and now took for her support her grandson, Alexander, who was just rising out of infancy, with intent to oppose him to his father.

What a contrast, what a lesson, does the death of the three greatest personages in Russia offer!

Orlof, who reigned twelve years by the side of Catherine, died in a state of wretched insanity. Potemkin, the powerful, the magnificent Potemkin, the founder of so many palaces and cities, the conqueror of a kingdom, expired on the roadside; and Catherine herself fell down in her water-closet, and died on the floor with a lamentable shriek!

The wealth of Potemkin has been exaggerated; it was far short of that of Mentchikof, and still less of what the unworthy Biren amassed. Even the last favourite possessed more. It is true Potemkin had immediate access to the treasury of the State; but he also spent a great deal for the State, and showed himself as much Grand Prince of Russia as favourite of Catherine. Zubof had equal command over the public treasury, and never expended a rouble for the public.

Potemkin was distinguished from all his colleagues in not losing the confidence of the Empress when he no longer possessed her heart. Ambition succeeded love in his breast, and he still retained all his influence, insomuch that every succeeding favourite was appointed by him, and remained subordinate to him.

#### 6.—ZAVADOFSKY

Was the man whom Potemkin presented to Catherine,

to succeed in fulfilling the office of private favourite. He was young, vigorous, and well made; but Catherine's inclination for him was soon at an end. He had been secretary; his disgrace made no noise; he continued to be employed in the affairs of the Cabinet, and was made a privy counsellor.

7.—ZORITCH,

On whom the inconstant Catherine next cast her eye, is the only foreigner whom she ventured to create favourite during her reign. He was a *Servian*, who had been taken prisoner by the Turks, and made his escape from Constantinople, where he was confined as a slave. He appeared at Court for the first time in the dress of a hussar. His beauty dazzled every eye, and the old ladies in Russia still speak of him as an Adonis. Protected at first by Potemkin, he was desirous of shaking off his yoke, quarrelled with him, and challenged him to fight a duel. His mind was not sufficiently cultivated to captivate that of Catherine, who dismissed him at the end of twelve months, loaded with favours. He obtained the town of Schklof, which was erected into a kind of sovereignty for him, an instance singular of its kind in Russia. There he lives as a prince, holding a Court, and

receiving strangers. If he be enriched with the spoils of the State, he returns part of them to it very nobly. He has founded at Schklof a corps of cadets, where two hundred young officers are educated at his expense. Notwithstanding these occupations, and the gaming, theatrical exhibitions, and other amusements in which he engages, and by which he ruins himself, he is tired of his principality. Some years ago he is said to have solicited permission to make his appearance again; it was not granted. Paul, however, has just called him to Court.

8.—KORSAKOF,

A sort of Russian fop, was raised to the rank of favourite from that of sergeant in the guards at the palace, where Catherine noticed him. He was either faithless or ungrateful. Catherine herself surprised him in the arms of the handsome Countess Bruce, her maid-of-honour and confidant. Struck with astonishment, she withdrew, and would never again see her lover or her friend. This was the only vengeance she exercised against them.

9.—LANSKOÏ,

One of the horse-guards, had obtained some reputa-

tion.<sup>1</sup> He was soon the most beloved of Catherine's lovers, and appeared most worthy to be so. He was handsome, graceful, and accomplished, an admirer of the arts, a friend to talents, humane, and beneficent. Everyone seemed to share the Sovereign's predilection for him. Perhaps he would have acquired as much influence by the qualities of his mind, as those of his heart procured him partisans. Potemkin feared him, and, *it is said*, gave him poison. He died with horrible pains in his bowels. Catherine in vain lavished on him the most tender cares; her lips received his last breath. She shut herself up for several days, which she passed in all the violence of grief. She accused Heaven, would die, would cease to reign, and swore never to love again. She really loved Lanskoï, and her affliction turned into rage against the physician, who could not save him, and who was obliged to throw himself at his Sovereign's feet, and request her pardon

---

1 All the officers who had, or thought they had, fine persons, endeavoured, on every occasion, to throw themselves in Catherine's way. Even at Court, the nobles would sometimes give place to a handsome man, knowing that nothing pleased their Sovereign so well as to traverse her apartments between two rows of handsome youths. It was a situation which men eagerly sought after, and exhibited themselves to the greatest advantage; and, indeed, many families founded their hopes on some young relation, whom they compelled to throw himself in the way of such good fortune.

for the impotence of his art. A decent and afflicted widow, she went into mourning for her lover, and, a new Artemisia, erected for him a superb mausoleum near Tzarsko-selo. She suffered more than a year to elapse before his place was again filled ; but, like another Ephesian matron, she gave him an unworthy successor. This was

10.—YERMOLOF,

The least amiable, and least striking in figure of all she had chosen, who was at length to console her for the handsome, the tender Lanskoï. He displeased Potemkin, however, before he ceased to please Catherine, and the haughty Prince demanded, and obtained, the dismissal of this favourite, who did not continue two years in office.

11.—MOMONOF,

Who had disputed the place with Yermolof, succeeded to it. Momonof was amiable, and his bust was a perfect model ; but he was not well made. Catherine approved and loved him, and would have done so long ; but he was soon disgusted with the faded charms of a mistress of sixty.

He became enamoured of the young Princess Scherbatof, and had the courage to avow it, demand-



ing permission to marry her. Catherine had pride and generosity sufficient to grant his request, without any reproaches. She saw him married at Court to the object of his honourable attachment, and sent him to Moscow loaded with presents.

12.—ZUBOF.

The rise of this last favourite has been explained at the beginning of this chapter. He was not quite five-and-twenty years old, the Empress was upwards of sixty.<sup>1</sup> She finished by treating him as much like a child as a lover, took upon herself the care of his education, and grew more and more attached to her own work, which became her idol. Yet, even at this advanced period of her life, she was seen to revive the orgies and *lupercalia* which she had formerly celebrated with the brothers Orlof. Valerian, a younger brother of Zubof, and Peter Soltikof, their friend, were associated in office with the favourite. With these three young libertines did

---

<sup>1</sup> Catherine was two years older than the almanac expressed. As she was older than Peter III., Elizabeth took off these two years when she sent for her into Russia; and there are old German calendars which prove that she was born in 1727. This is but an opinion, however, which several dispute, and which I have it not in my power to verify.

Catherine, the aged Catherine, spend her days, while her armies were slaughtering the Turks, fighting with the Swedes, and ravaging Poland; while her people were groaning in wretchedness and famine, and devoured by extortioners and tyrants.

It was at this juncture she formed a more intimate society, composed of her favourites and most trusty ladies and courtiers. This society met two or three times a week, under the name of the *Little Hermitage*. The parties were frequently masked, and the greatest privacy prevailed. They danced, represented proverbs, played, joked, romped, and engaged in all sorts of frolics and gambols (*jouait à des jeux d'esprit, à des jeux de gages, et à des jeux de mains*); in short, there was no kind of gaiety which was not permitted. Leof Narishkin acted the same part there as Roquelaure at the Court of Louis XIV.; and a fool by title, Matrona Danilofna, seconded him. This was an old gossip, whose wit consisted only in uttering the most absurd vulgarities; and, as she enjoyed the common right of fools, that of saying anything, she was loaded with presents by the lower order of courtiers. Such foreign ministers as enjoyed the favour of the Empress, were sometimes admitted to the Little Hermitage. Ségur, Cobentzel, Steding and

Nassau chiefly enjoyed this distinction ; but Catherine afterwards formed another assembly, more confined and more mysterious, which was called the *Little Society*. The three favourites of whom we have just been speaking, Branicki, Protasof, and some confidential women and *valets-de-chambre*, were its only members. In this the Cybele of the North celebrated her most secret mysteries. The particulars of these amusements are not fit to be repeated, and the public will lose nothing worth preserving by their remaining concealed. The author has burned all his memoranda which could have afforded any information on the subject.

I might have enlarged this chapter with the surnames, titles, and dignities of each favourite ; but they would not be worth paper and print, and do not deserve even to be mentioned. It is well known that Catherine, after having heaped upon her minions all the places, titles, and orders of knighthood of Russia, wrote to Vienna to obtain for them successively patents of Count and Prince of the Holy Roman Empire. The Orders of Poland and Prussia bedaubed also the favourites of the favourites. Potemkin and Zubof, when they displayed all their decorations, looked like the hawkers of ribands and trinkets at a fair.

•

Paul is more of a Russian than his mother. He is of opinion that a count or prince of the Greek Empire is superior to a count or prince of the Roman Empire. Under Catherine, the Russian kniaz was made a German prince; under Paul, the German prince is raised to the dignity of a Russian kniaz. I shall not take upon me to decide the question of precedence.

In like manner I shall pass over the gifts and presents bestowed on the favourites. I could mention only what they have received publicly as recompenses; and, however enormous the sum may appear,<sup>1</sup> it was not equal to the gifts lavished on them in secret. Who can calculate what the Orlofs, Potemkin, and the Zubofs received? Had they not access to the imperial treasury, without rendering any account of the sums they took from it? and were not places, rank, justice, impunity, nay, even foreign alliances, peace and war, purchased of them and of their creatures?<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> I have a pretty accurate list; the sum is greater by one-third than that given in the book entitled "*Histoire de Catherine II.*"

<sup>2</sup> Valerian Zubof, a few months after he had shared with his brother the favours of Catherine, staked thirty thousand roubles—£3,000—on a single card at faro; and this young man possesses, as has been observed, part of the immense domains of the Dukes of Courland.

## CHAPTER IV

## ACCESSION OF PAUL

*Conduct and projects of Catherine with regard to her son—He is proclaimed—His first steps as Emperor—Funeral honours paid to his father and mother—Rigorous proceedings towards the guards—The wacht-parade—Favours and disgraces—His occupations—Proscription of round hats and Russian harness—Re-establishment of etiquette—Its ridiculous or cruel consequences—Change in the army, and in civil affairs—Peasants—Soldato-mania—Office of Punishment—Finances.*

ONE of the greatest crimes of which Catherine was guilty, was her conduct to that son in whose right she governed Russia five-and-thirty years. In his infancy he evinced qualities which were stifled by her ill-treatment. He had sense, activity, a disposition for the sciences, and sentiments of order and justice; but all these perished for want of being cultivated. Her dislike towards him has been urged as a proof of his

being the son of Peter III., and this proof is of considerable weight. She could not bear him—kept him at a distance from her, surrounded him with spies, held him in restraint, exposed him to every kind of humiliation; and while her favourites, inferior to her son in years, governed Russia and wallowed in wealth, he lived retired, insignificant, and in want of necessities. Thus she soured his temper and rendered him capricious and suspicious. Assuredly a mother must be highly culpable who inspires her own child with hatred and contempt. But what other sentiments could he entertain? Not satisfied with depriving him of the affection and prerogatives that he ought to have enjoyed as a son, she resolved to take from him, likewise, the rights and pleasures of a father. His wife came almost every year to lay-in at Tzarsko-selo, and left her children there in the hands of strangers. They were brought up under Catherine, without the father or mother having the least influence in their education or authority over their conduct. Latterly, they were even whole months without seeing them. Thus she sought to alienate the hearts of these children from parents whom they scarcely knew. Here, however, Paul ceases to inspire interest: here he no longer appears the timid and respectful child,

but the fearful, imbecile father. What man is base enough not to claim the sacred rights of paternity? Why had he not the spirit to say to his mother, "You have my crown, keep it; but restore me my children; leave me, at least, an enjoyment which you do not envy in your lowest slaves." He who finds not in his heart sufficient motives to hold such language, and to act conformably to it, deserves not praise as a respectful son, but rather blame as a thoughtless, unfeeling father.<sup>1</sup>

Death took Catherine by surprise. It is evident to those who were acquainted with her Court and the unfortunate estrangement between the mother and son, that she entertained a wish to have another successor. The dread of reflecting on the end of her days, and on that of her reign, which she feared still more, with the death of Potemkin,<sup>2</sup> prevented her from accomplishing this project while she had time for it, or from confirming it by a will. The youth of the

---

<sup>1</sup> The Duke of Würtemberg, brother to the present Empress, acted in a more becoming manner. Catherine being desirous of taking charge of his children, he declared that he would rather die than give them up. She durst not venture to proceed to extremities, and he took them with him out of the country.

<sup>2</sup> Many have supposed that she entertained a design of making Potemkin King of Taurica, in order to have his support in dis-inheriting Paul and proclaiming Alexander Tzarevitch.

Grand Duke Alexander, and, still more, the goodness of his head and heart, were afterwards obstacles to the execution of her design. Her predilection for the young Prince, however—worthy, no doubt, of a purer source—was very striking; and her private conferences with him began to be frequent and mysterious. Perhaps she might in time have succeeded in endeavours to stifle in him the voice of nature, have corrupted his understanding and his morals, and driven him imperceptibly to act a detestable part towards his father. After La Harpe had quitted him, after a separate Court was established for him, and some persons of merit removed, he was the worst attended and least occupied of princes. His days were spent alone with his wife, with his valets, or in the society of his grandmother. He lived more effeminate and obscure than the heir of a Sultan in the harem of a seraglio. This kind of life must, at length, have stifled all his excellent qualities. Had he been willing, or had Catherine even been able to speak but a few words before she died, Paul probably would never have reigned. Who would have declared for him, and to what rights could he have appealed?<sup>1</sup> If the Russians

---

<sup>1</sup> I am aware that Paul was proclaimed Tzarevitch, or heir to the throne. Since his accession, he has attempted to remove



have no fixed rights, still less have their Sovereigns. Since Peter I., who arrogated to himself the power

the confusion that prevails in the succession of the Tzars by an act which he promulgated at his coronation, and which he had framed, in concert with his wife, in the form of a will, so early as the year 1788—consequently, when he was only Grand Duke, and, of course, could dispose of nothing. The year 1788 was the time when Potemkin was in the zenith of his power. It appears that Paul, at that juncture, apprehended some unhappy catastrophe since he made these arrangements; in fact, it was then in agitation to disinherit him, and divide the Empire between his eldest son and Potemkin.

In this act, Paul, though merely Grand Duke, arrogates to himself the same right as Peter I.—that of nominating his successor. Accordingly, he bequeaths the Empire to his eldest son and his male descendants; failing these also, his female descendants were to succeed in an order which Paul laid down, endeavouring to prevent and regulate all the inconveniences that could occur to the end of time.

That the son should be heir to his father is a natural right, but there can be no right by which an Emperor shall nominate his successor and bequeath an Empire like an estate. Let us suppose, however, that a Russian Sovereign is actually possessed of this power. How can one take it from the rest, or restrict it, by nominating the successor of his successor? Is not Alexander or Constantine to enjoy the same power as Paul? Is it not treasonable to imagine the contrary? Such are the inconveniences in which they involve themselves who build upon errors and prejudices, and condemn the laws of nature and nations. The laws which issue from their brains, having no support but the power that promulgates them, perish with it. A hundred years hence, a Russian Emperor will not tumble over the old papers of Paul to know how he shall act; for, before that time, perhaps, events may take place which will inspire into the minds of the Russians ideas more clear and simple.

of nominating his successor, the throne of the Tzars has been occupied by scarcely any other than usurpers, who have overturned each other with more barbarity and confusion than the successors of Ottoman. Catherine I. became Empress because Mentchikof had the boldness to proclaim her<sup>1</sup>; Peter II. reigned by virtue of a will; Anne was elected by a council, the senate and the army; Ivan was made Emperor by an ukase; Elizabeth said, in her manifesto, that she ascended the throne of her father because the people willed it, and the guards revolted; and on these grounds she condemned a Prince in the cradle to a perpetual prison; and his relations, as innocent as himself, experienced the same fate. Peter III. reigned by favour of Elizabeth; and when he was dethroned, Catherine II., ascending the throne of Russia, declared that Heaven itself had called her to it. A son supplanting his father would not, after such a series, have excited any remarkable disgust, but the sudden death of Catherine happily prevented that catastrophe. The dreadful shriek she gave as she expired was the voice that proclaimed Paul Emperor of all the Russias. His wife was the first who fell at his feet, and paid

<sup>1</sup> It was pleasantly said on that occasion that a journeyman pastry-cook proclaimed a servant-maid Empress of all the Russias.

him homage with all her children ; he raised her up, embraced her and them, giving them assurance of his imperial and paternal kindness. The Court, the chief officers of the different departments and of the army, all who were on the spot, came then to prostrate themselves and take the oath to him, each according to his rank and seniority. A detachment of guards conducted him into the palace, and the officers and soldiers, arriving in haste from Pavlofsky and Gatshina, swore fealty to him ; the heads of the different colleges hastened to take the same oath. The Emperor repaired himself to the senate to receive it ; and this memorable night passed without disturbance or confusion.

The next day, Paul was proclaimed Emperor everywhere, and his son Alexander *Tzarevitch*, or heir-presumptive to the throne. Thus, after five-and-thirty years spent amid restraint, denials, offences and contempt, the son of Catherine, at the age of forty-three, found himself at length master of himself and of all the Russias. The first steps which he took seemed to contradict the reports of his stern and capricious disposition. He had long suffered by the abuses and disorders of the Court ; bred in the school of misfortune—the crucible in which great minds are refined,

and little ones evaporate—a distant spectator of affairs, scrutinizing the plans and conduct of his mother, he had had thirty years' leisure to regulate his own. Accordingly, it appeared that he had in his pocket a multitude of regulations ready drawn up, which he had nothing to do but to unfold and put in execution with astonishing rapidity.<sup>1</sup>

Far from imitating the conduct which his mother had held with respect to him, he immediately called his sons about him, entrusted each with the command of one of the regiments of guards, and made the elder military governor of St. Petersburg, an important post, which chained the young Prince to his father's side. His first behaviour towards the Empress surprised and delighted everyone. He suddenly changed his conduct towards her, assigned her a considerable revenue, increased those of his children in proportion, and loaded his family with caresses and kindnesses.

His conduct towards the favourite likewise had every feature of generosity. He appeared moved with his affliction; and, acknowledging the attachment he showed to his mother, continued him in his offices in

---

<sup>1</sup> His intimates had long been in possession of his military regulations, which he put in execution at Gatchina and Pavlofsky, and which in a moment became those of all the Russian armies.

flattering terms, saying, when he delivered to him the cane of command, which is borne by the general *aide-de-camp* upon duty: "Continue to execute those functions about the corpse of my mother; I hope you will serve me as faithfully as you have served her."

The ministers and the heads of the different departments were likewise confirmed in their employ in condescending terms; and the most powerful were even promoted and loaded with additional favours.

The first ukase he issued announced pacific dispositions, and must particularly have attached the nobility to him. A levy of recruits recently ordered by Catherine, which would have taken one peasant in every hundred, was suspended and annulled by this ukase. This levy, however, was a few months after renewed.

Every hour, every moment, announced some wise change, some just punishment, or some merited favour. The Court and city were surprised. People began to imagine that his character had been mistaken, and that his long and melancholy pupilage had not entirely depraved it. All the world saw itself happily deceived in its expectations, and the conduct of the Grand Duke was forgotten in that of the Emperor, but which was too soon brought again into remembrance. Let

us bestow a few minutes more on the hopes of happiness which he promised his Empire.

The first two political steps taken by Paul inspired confidence, gained the nobility, and suspended two horrible scourges which Catherine, at her death, seemed to have bequeathed to Prussia—war and a state bankruptcy. She had at length resolved to act directly against France by succouring the Emperor of Germany and attacking Prussia.<sup>1</sup> In consequence, she had issued orders for raising near a hundred thousand recruits. The coffers of the State being emptied, and assignats multiplied to such a point that they were threatened with the same fate as those of France,<sup>2</sup> she thought proper to double her current coin, by giving every piece of money twice its former value. Paul quashed these two disastrous measures, which had already begun to be carried into execution. At the same time, he broke off the treaty of subsidy with England, which was on the carpet; not that it was his intention, as had been published abroad, to acknow-

---

<sup>1</sup> This scheme of Catherine is incontrovertible; she resolved to drive the King of Prussia back to the borders of the Rhine with her cannon. To make him feel the absolute necessity of returning to the coalition, she fomented revolts in Prussia, at Dantzic, and in Silesia.

<sup>2</sup> At this juncture they fell sixty per cent.

ledge the French Republic, but because his imperial pride was, not without reason, above entering into the pay of England, like a petty state.<sup>1</sup>

Kosciuszko, who has been called the last of the Poles, as Philopœmen was the last of the Greeks, was made prisoner of war, as all the world knows, when defending his country against the attacks of foreigners. He was, however, detained as a state criminal, though he was always better treated<sup>2</sup> than

---

1 It is said, however, that he receives at present large subsidies from England, but it is in English goods; and Paul has established warehouses, where they are sold on his account. This trade of the Crown is not new; several of the Siberian tribes pay their taxes in kind; and, during the reign of Elizabeth, the trade with China was carried on by Government. It even sometimes happened that, for want of money, the officers of the army were paid in goods from the warehouses of the Crown, as tea, cloth and furs. These measures of Paul will prove infallible means of quickly conveying to England the little current coin left in his country, and he will soon be obliged to pay his whole army likewise in English hardware.

2 He was in the house of the late Count Anhalt. For a guard he had a major, who sat at table with him. People were permitted to see him; he had several rooms at his command, and he employed himself in reading, drawing and turning. The colonel to whom he was conducted as prisoner by the chasseurs, who found him wounded in a marsh, is a young man, a friend of mine, equally brave and humane. He kept a pocket-book of Kosciuszko's, which we looked over together. We found in it several notes in French and Italian, taken during a tour in Italy, philosophical observations, extracts from authors, effusions in

Ignatius Pototski and his other companions in misfortune, who were more rigorously confined in the fortress and at Schlüsselburg. Paul gave liberty to them all, and was generous enough to go himself to deliver Kosciuszko from confinement. It was interesting to see this brave man, still sick of his wounds and grief, carried to the palace, where he was introduced to the Emperor and Empress to testify his gratitude to them. He is a little, thin person, pale and emaciated; his head was still surrounded with bandages, and his forehead could not be seen; but his mien, his eyes, still brought to remembrance what he dared attempt with such feeble means. He refused the peasants that Paul would have given him in Russia, but accepted a sum of money to go and live independent in another country.<sup>1</sup>

---

French verse, and rough draughts of various small compositions. Everything showed that the pocket-book had belonged to a man of merit, knowledge, taste and feeling. There were in it likewise several letters, sealed, and addressed to ladies at Warsaw, in French and Polish, with sketches of some of the manifestoes he published, all in his own handwriting. My friend kept this pocket-book as a relic of a celebrated man whom he had admired, while forced to fight against him. When he was set at liberty, I suggested to my friend the idea of returning these papers to their owner, and I believe he did so.

1 America was the place he chose for his residence. When he was in England, on his way thither, a model of him was taken



This circumstance made a great and favourable impression on the public. Unquestionably it did honour to Paul; but, to appreciate his conduct on this occasion, it must be remembered that Kosciuszko had not personally offended him, though he had the Empress Catherine. Perhaps, therefore, Kosciuszko is indebted for his liberty to Paul's affectation of acting contrary to his mother in every respect.

The funeral honours to be paid to the Empress was another happy circumstance to engage the mind of Paul; thus suspending or interrupting the torrent of new regulations; but, what was not expected of him, he considered it as a filial duty to remove the ashes of his unfortunate father. The name of Peter III. which no one had dared to pronounce for five-and-thirty years, appeared on a sudden at the head of the ceremonial of mourning and interment; and the services to be performed, and funeral honours paid to Peter and Catherine, were prescribed at the same time. On reading the *prekase*, it might have been supposed that the husband and wife had just departed together. Paul repaired to the convent of Alexander

---

by Miss C. Andras, which is said to be a striking likeness, and from which an elegant whole-length engraving has been made by Sharpe.—TR.

Nefsky, where the body of his father had been deposited. Causing the old monks to show him the private grave, and open the coffin in his presence, he paid the sad remains that still presented themselves to his eyes, a tribute of respectful and affecting tears.<sup>1</sup> The coffin was placed on high in the middle of the church, and the same service was performed by it as by that of Catherine, which was exposed to view on a bed of state in the palace.

Paul then caused a search to be made for those officers who were attached to his father at the time of his unhappy catastrophe, and who had since lived in disgrace or unknown at Court. Baron Ungern Sternberg, a respectable old man, who had long lived in retirement amid a small circle of friends, and who had not even a wish to be brought forward again upon the stage of the great world, was at once made general-in-chief, and sent for to the Emperor, who ordered him to be ushered into his closet. After receiving him in the most gracious manner, he said, "Have you heard what I am doing for my father?"—

---

<sup>1</sup> He took one of the gloves that still covered the remains of his father, and kissed it several times with tears. O, Paul! thou hadst, then, the heart of a son; sometimes thou hast appeared a good father! What might not have been expected from another mother, and a different education!

"Yes, Sire," answered the old general, "I have heard it with astonishment."—"With astonishment! Why? Is it not a duty I had to fulfil? See," continued he, turning to a picture of Peter III. which was already placed in the closet,<sup>1</sup> "I will have him to witness my gratitude towards his faithful friend." Saying these words, he embraced General Ungern, and invested him with the riband of St. Alexander. The worthy old man, although he was little dazzled with this vanity, could not resist so affecting a scene, and retired with his eyes swimming in tears.

Paul then directed him to do duty by his father's body, enjoining him to provide for the ceremony the same uniform as he had worn when aide-de-camp to Peter III. Ungern was lucky enough to find such a one in the possession of an acquaintance. Paul would see this relic; he kept it himself, and it made the fortune of him who had so well preserved it.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> All the pictures of Peter III. had been proscribed, both in the imperial palaces and private houses. How Paul contrived to conceal this I cannot tell. Happy at this period he who could find one of these portraits in a lumber-room, to which it had been banished: it presently became the chief ornament of his house. The painters of St. Petersburg could not supply the demand for copies.

<sup>2</sup> General Ungern Sternberg is a Livonian, and was formerly the friend and comrade of General Melissino. The writer of these

Several other officers, and among them the only one who had attempted to make any resistance in favour of Peter III. at the revolution in 1762, were found out in their retirement, and recalled to Court, to be loaded with favours.

These particulars are affecting, and do honour to the heart of Paul; but it appears, from the answer of Ungern, that they astonished everyone. Some attribute them as much to Paul's opposition to his mother,

---

Memoirs has been very intimate with him, which he mentions here to give more weight to what follows. Ungern was one of those German officers who stood highest in Peter's esteem, and was his aide-de-camp. It was he whom he chose to accompany him in a secret visit which he paid to the unfortunate Ivan at Schlüsselburg, where he had been confined by Elizabeth, who dethroned him. They found this wretched young man in a dungeon, the window of which admitted but a faint gleam of day, the light being intercepted by piles of wood heaped up in the court. He was in a very dirty white jacket, with a pair of old shoes on his feet. His hair was very light, and cut short like that of a Russian slave. He was tolerably well made, and his complexion had a paleness which showed that the sun had never shone on his face. He was then upwards of twenty, and had been confined ever since he was fourteen months old; but he had received some impressions and ideas which he still retained. Peter III., affected at his condition, put several questions to him; among the rest, "Who are you?"—"I am the Emperor."—"Who put you into prison, then?"—"Vile, wicked people."—"Would you like to be Emperor again?"—"To be sure; why not? I should then have fine clothes, and servants to wait upon me."—"But what would you do if you were Emperor?"

as to his love for his father; and several ascribe this part of his conduct to a politic design of thus proclaiming him for his father who would not, when alive, acknowledge him for his son. The parade and ostentation with which he caused the sad remains of Peter to be disinterred, and then held up to the admiration of the public, were particularly blamed. The

---

—"I would cut off the heads of all those who have wronged me." Peter III. having then asked whence he learned what he had told him, he answered, that he had it from the Virgin and the angels, and began to enter into long stories of these pretended visions. Though alone, and confined from his infancy, he did not appear terrified at the sight of the Emperor and his officers. He examined his dress and weapons with much curiosity and pleasure, as a bold child would have done. The Emperor asked him again what he wished for, and he answered, in his vulgar Russian dialect, "To have more air." Ungern was left some time at Schlüsselburg to gain his confidence, and find out whether his apparent imbecility were only assumed. He was soon convinced, however, that it was the natural consequence of his mode of life. He gave him, from the Emperor, a silk morning gown. Ivan put it on with transports of joy, running about the room, and admiring himself as a savage would have done who had never been dressed before. As all his wishes centred in the requisition of more air, Peter III. sent the plan of a little circular palace, in the centre of which was to be a garden, with orders to have it built for Ivan in the court of the fortress. It was cruel that this act of humanity towards an innocent man should have served as a pretext against the unfortunate Peter. He was charged with having intended to build a prison for his wife and son, and this was made a pretext for his own assassination.

coffin that contained them was crowned,<sup>1</sup> and removed in great pomp to the palace, to be exhibited there, in a temple constructed for the purpose, by the side of the corpse of Catherine, with which it was afterwards to be conveyed to the citadel. Then alone did the husband and wife rest together in peace. People came with great respect to kiss the coffin of the one, and the cold and livid hand of the other; they made a genuflexion, and were obliged to descend the stairs backwards. The Empress, who had been badly embalmed, soon appeared quite disfigured: her hands, eyes, and lower part of her face, were black, blue, and yellow. Those who had seen her only in public could not know her again, and all the pomp with which she was still surrounded, all the riches that covered her corpse, served only to augment the horror it inspired.

If, by restoring the honours of his father, Paul might be thought by any to throw disgrace on the memory of his mother, by bringing to mind the scenes which five-and-thirty years' silence had nearly consigned to oblivion, yet the vengeance he took on some

---

<sup>1</sup> Peter III. had never been crowned, and this was the reason assigned for not burying him in the citadel with the other Russian Emperors.

of the assassins of Peter III. possessed a degree of sublimity which was approved by all. The celebrated Alexis Orlof, the conqueror of Tchesme, once so powerful, remarkable for his gigantic stature and antique dress, and whose age and military honours would have entitled him to respect, if such a man could be respected, was obliged to follow the sad remains of Peter. Every eye was turned upon him, and the performance of this just, but cruel task, must have awakened in him that remorse which his long prosperity had no doubt lulled to sleep. As to Prince Baratinsky, he durst not appear before Paul, who could never bear his sight, but had fled from St. Petersburg. Passick, who owed his fortune solely to the same crime, which his very countenance seemed to call to mind, was fortunately absent from Court, and survived the funeral but a few days.

This was the conduct of Paul in the first days of his reign; and I have collected the whole of it together, lest these instances of reason, justice, and feeling, should be lost and forgotten in the heap of unaccountable actions with which they were afterwards obscured, and which I shall now proceed to relate.

The guards, that dangerous body of men who

had overturned the throne of the father, and who had long considered the accession of the son as the term of their military existence, were rendered incapable of injuring him by a bold and vigorous step, and treated without the least management from the first day. Paul incorporated in the different regiments of guards his battalions that arrived from Gatshina,<sup>1</sup> the officers of which he distributed among the various companies, promoting them at the same time two or three steps; so that simple lieutenants or captains in the army found themselves at once captains in the guards, a place so important, and hitherto so honoured, and which gives the rank of colonel, or even of brigadier. Some of those ancient captains of the first families in the kingdom found themselves under the command of officers of no birth, who, but a few years before, had left their companies as sergeants or corporals, to enter into the battalions of the Grand Duke. This bold and hasty change, which at any

---

<sup>1</sup> Paul expected these battalions with evident impatience and anxiety. They marched all night, and arrived in the morning. Ratikof, a subaltern, who had no other merit than the good fortune of announcing to him their wished-for arrival, was instantly created a Knight of St. Anne, and made aide-de-camp to the Grand Duke. It was not till Paul saw himself surrounded with his little army, that he began to act as he had done at Gatshina.



other time would have been fatal to its author, had only the effect of inducing a few hundreds of officers, subalterns and others to retire. Most of these were such as had sufficient to live upon beside their commissions, or could neither digest the putting of others over their heads, nor support the harassing discipline which the intruders were about to establish.<sup>1</sup> Many

---

1 Of these obtruded officers, no one made his fortune so rapidly as Araktscheief. Seven years before, the Grand Duke, wishing to have a company of artillery at Pavlofsky, asked General Melissino for an officer capable of forming one. Araktscheief, who had been brought up in the corps of cadets, and who had gotten himself noticed by the progress he made, and particularly for the ardour and passionate zeal he displayed for the minutiae of discipline, was named. In spite of his indefatigable attentions, severity, and exactness in the service, it was some time before he could establish himself thoroughly in the good opinion of Paul. Several pretty fireworks, which he composed with the assistance of his old master for the entertainment at Pavlofsky, but, above all, the rage for exercising with which he burned, and which induced him to harass the soldiers day and night, at length gained him the favour of the Grand Duke. At his accession to the throne, Araktscheief was created a major in the guards, with the rank of general, and appointed military governor of St. Petersburg. He received the military order of St. Anne, with some thousands of peasants, and became the Emperor's right-hand. Araktscheief, with whom Major M—— had served in the corps of cadets, where he was serjeant, was truly commendable for the talents, acquirements, and zeal which he displayed at that time: but he possesses a disgusting degree of brutality, which he exercised even towards the cadets. Never was Pindaric poet more imperiously tormented by his muse, than this man is possessed by his military demon.

of these young officers, however, felt no other affront than that of being obliged to quit their brilliant uniforms, and to alter their dress according to that of those battalions which had so long excited their ridicule.

Paul, alarmed and enraged at this general deser-

---

His fury and his cane have already cost more than one unfortunate soldier his life, even under the eye of Paul. He has revived a barbarity which was no longer known in the Russian service: he abuses and strikes the very officers when exercising. However, at the period of his favour, that he might have the appearance of being grateful, he recommended General Melissino, his former friend, with whom he was at variance. He has just been disgraced, but since recalled, and created a baron. It was he who reviewed the troops sent into Germany.

The history of another of these officers deserves to be mentioned for its singularity. It will prove how a man sometimes makes his way in the world.

One of the friends of Major M——, taking a walk on the quay, met with a youth of sixteen, who appeared to have lately landed, and who walked in despair along the water-side, as if meditating to throw himself in. He went up and spoke to him. The young stranger said that he was a Frenchman by descent, but born in Russia; that the Grand Duke had been his god-father; that his father had sent him in his infancy to France, to be educated in a seminary there, from which he had eloped to return to Russia, where he could learn no news of his father; that he was without money, without acquaintances, and did not know what to do unless he made away with himself. The major's friend endeavoured to console him, took him to his own house and made some enquiries. He learned that his father, Baron Bilistein, had in fact been preceptor to the Grand Duke, but that he had since married in

tion, went to the barracks, flattered the soldiers, appeased the officers, and endeavoured to retain them by excluding from all employ, civil and military, those who should retire in future, and who, besides, were no longer to wear their uniform. He afterwards issued an order that every officer or subaltern who had re-

---

Moldavia, where he died. Major M—— and his friends exerted themselves to get the young man admitted into the guards as a subaltern officer. In the Swedish war he went with his regiment, and was made prisoner at the defeat of the Russian galleys. A year after he came back in a more deplorable condition than ever; and, to add to his misfortunes, the major's friend and his other patrons being no longer at St. Petersburg, he had no resource but Major M——, to whom he came every day to relate his misfortunes. One morning he found him reading the life of Jamerai-Duval, and his correspondence with Miss Sacalof, afterwards the wife of Admiral Ribas. M—— knew that this lady was a friend of Miss Nelido, the mistress of the Grand Duke, which suggested to him the following step. He dictated to Bilistein a letter to Madame Ribas, in which he told her that the accidentally reading one of her charming letters to Duval had suspended his despair, because he conceived that a lady who could paint the sentiments of benevolence and humanity so well, must possess them in her heart: in consequence, he laid before her his sad situation, and solicited her influence to be recommended to the Grand Duke. Madame Ribas sent for him, and recommended him to Miss Nelidof, who presented him to the Grand Duke. A few hundred roubles were given him to equip himself, and through the means of Count Soltikof he obtained a lieutenant's commission in the battalions at Pavlofsky. From that time he lived less wretched, and always appeared extremely grateful. At the accession of the Grand Duke he was made a lieutenant-colonel in the guards.

signed, or should give in his resignation, should quit the capital within four-and-twenty hours and return to his own home. It did not enter into the head of the person who drew up the ukase that it contained an absurdity, for several of the officers were natives of St. Petersburg, and had families residing in the city. Accordingly some of them retired to their homes without quitting the capital, not obeying the first part of the order, lest they should be found guilty of disobedience to the second. Arkarof, who was to see it put in force, having informed the Emperor of this contradiction, he directed that the injunction to quit St. Petersburg should alone be obeyed. A number of young men were consequently taken out of their houses as criminals, put out of the city with orders not to re-enter it, and left in the road, without shelter and without any furred garments, in very severe weather. They who belonged to very remote provinces, for the most part wanting money to carry them thither, wandered about the neighbourhood of St. Petersburg, where several perished with cold and want.

These measures were extended to all the officers of the army, and those on the staff as generals were equally obliged to join their regiments or resign, be-

cause these staffs were abolished. By this impolitic step he pretended to commence a reform and gain the army. But what soon showed that Paul, in becoming Emperor, by no means renounced the military trifles which had alone occupied his time as Grand Duke, was his devoting all his attention, from the morning of his ascending the throne, to the frivolous changes which he wished to introduce into the dress and exercise of the soldiers. For a moment the palace had the appearance of a place taken by assault by foreign troops, those who began to mount guard there differing so much in dress and style from those who had been seen there the day before. He went down into the court, where he was manœuvring his soldiers three or four hours, to teach them to mount guard after his fashion, and establish his *wacht-parade* (guard-parade), which became the most important institution and central point of his government. Every day since he has dedicated the same time to it, however cold it might be. There, in a plain deep green uniform, great boots and a large hat, he spends his mornings in exercising his guards; there he gives his orders, receives reports, publishes his favours, rewards and punishments; and there every officer must be presented to him, surrounded by his sons and aides-de-camp,

stamping his heels on the pavement to keep himself warm, his bald head bare, his nose cocked up, one hand behind his back, and with the other raising and falling his cane in due time and crying, *raz, dva; raz, dva* (one, two; one, two). He prides himself in braving a cold of fifteen or twenty degrees of Réaumur without furs. After this none of the officers dared any longer appear in pelisses, and the old generals, tormented with coughs, gout and rheumatism, were obliged to form a circle round Paul, dressed like himself.<sup>1</sup>

After the first impressions which his accession caused in the heart of Paul, punishments and disgraces succeeded, with the same rapidity and profusion with which he had lavished his favours. Several

---

1 A Hogarth, who should see the Emperor and his younger son busy about a poor recruit, turning him to the right and to the left, marching him forward and backward, raising up his chin, tightening his belt, and placing his head properly, with every now and then a blow, would have a fine subject for a caricature. An emigrant of the name of Lami conceived the humorous idea of dedicating to Paul a bad translation he made of the explanation of Hogarth's prints. I know not whether he did it out of simplicity, or as a stroke of satire; but the name of Paul is very happily placed at the head of that work, which wanted only the ridicule of such a dedication to make it complete. Paul, however, suspected no joke in it, for he sent Abbé Lami a present of a snuff-box.

experienced the two extremes in a few days. It is true that most of these punishments at first appeared just; but then it must be allowed that Paul could scarcely strike any but the guilty, so corrupt had been all who were about the throne.

Notwithstanding the assurances he had given Zubof, one of the first orders that followed was to seal up his office and that of Markof, and to turn their officers and secretaries out of Court with disgrace. One Tersky, master of requests and reporter to the senate, who publicly sold justice to the highest bidder, was at first gratified with an order of knighthood, and obtained some lands, which he said the late Empress had promised him a few days before her decease. Next morning he was dismissed from his offices. This respect of Paul to the pretended will of his mother, and his care to enrich a rascal before discarding him, were strangely admired. Surely he ought rather to have brought to trial this despoiler of the widow and orphan, and made him an example to satisfy public justice. \*

Samoïlof, the attorney-general, whom likewise he had honourably confirmed in his office, with a present of four thousand peasants, amounting in value to more than twenty thousand roubles (£2,000) a year, was

displaced a few days after, put under arrest, and his secretary was sent to the fortress. Thus was everything reformed, except Besborodko, Nicholas Soltikof and Arkarof.<sup>1</sup>

This wavering and uncertain conduct, which characterised the first steps of Paul, clearly proves that his favours were the effects of policy, and the disgraces that followed them were to be ascribed to passion rather than to justice. But what confounded all who had admired him was to see him, at the moment when he entered such an intricate labyrinth of business and abuses (the importance of which to the State should have occupied him at least some days), applying the very morning of his accession, with the same eagerness, to the most trifling details of military service. The shape of a hat, the colour of a feather, the altitude of a grenadier's cap, boots, spatterdashes, cockades, queues and sword-belts, became the affairs of State that absorbed his astonishing activity. He was surrounded by patterns of accoutrements and uniforms of all kinds. The greatest proof of zeal and merit anyone could give him, during the first days of his reign, was to appear before him in the new uniform he had introduced. An officer who

---

<sup>1</sup> See the next chapter.



could give his tailor a hundred roubles to have a dress of the new fashion made in a few hours, and appear in it the next morning in the *wacht-parade*, was almost certain of obtaining some post, or, at least, a cross. Several had no other merit, and employed no other means to gain the good graces of their new Emperor.<sup>1</sup>

Another whim, which caused no little surprise, was the imperial prohibition of wearing round hats, or, rather, the sudden order of taking them away or tearing them to pieces on the heads of those who appeared in them. This occasioned some disgraceful scenes in the streets, and particularly near the palace. The Cossacks and soldiers of the police fell on the passengers to uncover their heads, and beat those who, not knowing the reason, attempted to defend themselves. An English merchant, going through the street in a sledge, was thus stopped and his hat snatched off. Supposing it to be a robbery, he

---

<sup>1</sup> General Meyendorf being mentioned to him as a good officer of horse, he despatched a courier to him; and Meyendorf, in his eagerness to obey the command, presented himself at the parade in his ancient uniform. Paul, enraged, uttered some severe reproaches to those who had recommended such a man, called him one of *Potemkin's soldiers*, and banished him to his estate.

leaped out of his sledge, knocked down the soldier, and called the guard. Instead of the guard arrived an officer, who overpowered and bound him; but as they were carrying him before the police, he was fortunate enough to meet the coach of the English minister, who was going to Court, and claimed his protection.<sup>1</sup> Sir Charles Whitworth made his complaint to the Emperor, who, conjecturing that a round hat might be the national dress of the English, as it is of the Swedes,<sup>2</sup> said that his order had been misconceived, and he would explain himself more fully to Arkarof. The next day it was published in the streets and houses, that strangers who were not in the Emperor's service, or naturalized, were not comprised in the prohibition. Round hats were now no longer pulled off, but they who were met with this unlucky head-dress were conducted to the police to

---

1 Another Englishman was met by an officer of the police, who took from him his round hat. The Englishman, folding his arms, and surveying him from head to foot, said, with a look of compassion, "Ah, friend, how I pity thee for being a Russian!"

2 It is likewise the national hat of the Russians, a little difference in the crown excepted, which it was well to be apprised of, as it prevented the wearer from insult. The hatters' shops being soon emptied of cocked hats, they who had neither time nor means to procure one, cocked up their little round hats with pins, that they might walk the streets with safety.

ascertain their country. If they were found to be Russians, they were sent for soldiers; and woe to a Frenchman who had been met with in this dress, for he would have been condemned as a Jacobin.<sup>1</sup> It was reported to Paul that the chargé d'affaires of the King of Sardinia, indulging himself in raillery at this singular proscription of round hats, said that such trifles had often been on the point of occasioning seditions in Italy. The chargé d'affaires received orders, through Arkarof, to quit the city in twenty-four hours. Thanks to the distance and situation of the King of Sardinia, he could not demand an explanation of such an insult; otherwise round hats might have become the motive of a war between two monarchs.<sup>2</sup>

A regulation equally incomprehensible was the

---

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps the reader may suppose that these round hats were considered as some party sign. By no means; it was a singular aversion which Paul had for them, and he had declared war against them at Pavlofsky four years before.

<sup>2</sup> It was fortunate that it did not happen to the Swedish or Prussian ambassador. The latter, however, fell into disgrace with Paul for a motive equally noble. He gives out that the hat, the tail, the bag, the spatterdashes, and the sword behind the back, are in the Prussian mode. M. van Tauenziehn appeared to protest against the fidelity of the translation by coming to Court in a more modern and more elegant uniform. This was the crime for which Paul demanded his recall.

sudden prohibition of harnessing horses after the Russian mode. A fortnight was allowed for procuring harness in the German fashion, after the expiration of which the police were enjoined to cut the traces of every carriage, the horses of which were harnessed in the ancient manner. Almost as soon as it was made public, several persons dared not venture abroad, still less appear in their carriages near the palace, for fear of being insulted. The saddlers, availing themselves of the occasion, asked as far as three hundred roubles (£30) for a plain harness for a pair of horses. To dress the *ischvoschtschiki*, or Russian coachmen, in the German fashion, was attended with another inconvenience. Most of them would neither part with their long beards, their *kaftans*, nor their round hats; still less would they tie a false tail to their short hair, which produced the most ridiculous scenes and figures in the world. At length the Emperor had the vexation to be obliged to change his rigorous order into a simple invitation to his subjects gradually to adopt the German fashion of dress, if they wished to merit his favour.

Another reform with respect to carriages; the great number of splendid equipages that swarmed in the streets of St. Petersburg disappeared in an instant.

The officers, even the generals, came to the parade on foot, or in little sledges, which also was not without its dangers.<sup>1</sup>

It was anciently a point of etiquette for every person who met a Russian autocrat, his wife or son, to stop his horse or coach, alight, and prostrate himself in the snow, or in the mud.<sup>2</sup> This barbarous homage, difficult to be paid in a large city, where carriages pass in great numbers and always on the gallop, had been completely abolished under the reign of the polished Catherine. One of the first cares of Paul was to re-establish it in all its rigour. A general officer, who passed on without his coachman's observing the Emperor riding by on horseback, was stopped and immediately put under arrest.<sup>3</sup> The same

---

1 An officer, walking the streets in a large pelisse, had given his servant his sword, which incommoded him, intending to put it on again, and to take off his pelisse, when he got near the palace. Unfortunately, before this took place, the Emperor met him, and, in consequence, he was reduced to the ranks, and his servant made an officer in his place.

2 Peter I. ordered those who prostrated themselves before him in this manner to be caned, and even caned them himself.

3 When his sword was returned him, he refused to take it, saying that it was a gold-hilted sword received from the Empress, with the privilege of its never being taken from him. Paul sent for him, returned the sword to him himself, and said that he had resolved to make an example, and had no particular ill-will towards him; at the same time he ordered him to repair immediately to the army.

unpleasant circumstance occurred to several others, so that nothing was so much dreaded, either on foot or in a carriage, as the meeting of the Emperor. Instances have even happened where the fault and its punishment have been attended with consequences so serious as must induce a benevolent monarch to abolish so troublesome an etiquette.

The ceremony established within the palace became equally strict, and equally dreaded. Woe betide him who, when permitted to kiss the hand of Paul, did not make the floor resound by striking it with his knee as loud as a soldier with the butt-end of his firelock. It was requisite, too, that the salute of the lips on his hand should be heard, to certify the reality of the kiss, as well as of the genuflexion. Prince George Gallitzin, the chamberlain, was put under arrest on the spot by His Muscovitish Majesty himself, for having made the bow and kissed the hand too negligently.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Paul, when Grand Duke, had a great predilection for etiquette. Being once at Montbelliard, he suddenly took by the arm a young officer of his suite, who was playing at cards, and turning him out of the room, he said to those who were playing with the officer, "Gentlemen, that young coxcomb is not of a proper rank to make one of your party." At the Court balls, the dancers were obliged to twist themselves every possible

Another of Paul's first regulations was a strict injunction to all tradesmen to efface from the front of their shops the French word *magazin*, and substitute the Russian word *lavka* (shop); assigning as a reason that the Emperor alone could have magazines of wood, flour, corn, &c.; while a tradesman ought not to be above his condition, but to stick to his shop.

To report all the ordinances of similar weight and importance that succeeded each other in the course of one week, I must descend into particulars too tedious.<sup>1</sup> What can be said, what can be hoped, of a man who, succeeding Catherine, could consider the regulating such things as the most urgent? Frequently these new and important regulations contradicted or frustrated one another, and what was

---

way, that they might not turn their backs upon him when dancing, wherever he might happen to be. Paul will allow none to turn their backs but his enemies. Whether they will avail themselves of the permission, if he should give them an opportunity, I will not pretend to say.

<sup>1</sup> He has since issued different ukases, prohibiting the wearing of frock coats, waistcoats without sleeves, and pantaloons. He has forbidden the academy to use the word *revolution* when speaking of the course of the stars; and has enjoined the players to employ the word *permission* instead of *liberty*, which they had been accustomed to put in their bills. He has forbidden the manufacturers to fabricate any tri-coloured ribands or stuffs whatever.

ordained one day was often obliged to be modified or annulled the next. In a word, we may say that Paul, when he wrapped himself in the imperial mantle, let the Grand Duke peep out ; that he thought to govern a vast Empire as he had governed his Pavlofsky ; his capital, like his house ; and thirty millions of men of all ranks and all nations, like a score of lackeys.

Of all the unforeseen changes which he introduced without any preparation, those which he made in the army were the most extensive, and the most impolitic. Unquestionably there was room for great reforms and great amendments in the military department. To improve the condition of the brave Russian soldier ; to settle that of the officer, which was still more wretched ; gradually to diminish the number of supernumeraries ; to restore order and discipline, which the reign of so many women, and so many favourites, had destroyed ; opened a fine field to the military genius of Paul. All he was capable of doing was to multiply irregular promotions, increase a staff already too numerous, and alter uniforms, ranks, terms, and titles. The Russian army offered a pattern to be followed, in the beauty, simplicity, and convenience of its dress, equally adapted to the climate, and to the genius of



the country.<sup>1</sup> A large *charvari*, or pair of pantaloons of red cloth, the ends of which terminated in boots of pliable leather, and which was fastened by a girdle over a red and green jacket, a little helmet well adapted to a soldier, with the hair cut short in the neck, but long enough to cover the ears, and easily kept in order, constituted the whole of the military uniform. The soldier was dressed in the twinkling of an eye, for he had but two garments, and their size was such as allowed him to defend himself from the cold by additions underneath, without infringing upon the uniformity of his external appearance. This neat and warlike equipage is now changed for the ancient dress of Germany, which the Russian soldier abominates; his fair locks, which he loved to wash every morning, he must now bedaub with grease and flour; and he must spend an hour in buttoning his black spatterdashes, which he curses for pinching his legs. He murmurs aloud; it is probable that the false tail

---

<sup>1</sup> Accordingly the soldier imagined himself much superior to his neighbours, and not without reason. Paul deprived him of this national pride, by compelling him servilely to imitate the Germans of the last century, whom the Russians imagined they had far outstripped. Paul has acted like a pedant who should turn a scholar back to his *a, b, c*, for having presumed to learn to read too rapidly.

which he is forced to suspend from his poll will occasion as many desertions as the catogans of St. Germain.<sup>1</sup> That old original, Marshal Suvarof, when he received orders to establish these novelties, with little sticks for models for the soldiers tails and side-curls, said, "Hair-powder is not gunpowder; curls are not cannons; and tails are not bayonets." This sarcasm, which is not destitute of wit, and forms in the Russian language a sort of apophthegm in rhyme, soon spread from mouth to mouth through the army, and was the true reason that induced Paul to recall Suvarof, and dismiss him from the service. This old warrior was the idol of the Russian soldiery.

It was the same with the changes which he made in civil affairs. His wish was to alter, not to improve. For anything to have subsisted under the reign of his mother was a sufficient reason why it should cease under him. All the tribunals, all the governments of the Empire, have been fresh modelled, and their seats

---

<sup>1</sup> Before the reign of Paul, desertion was almost unknown to the Russians; now they desert in parties, and repair to Prussia, where whole regiments are formed of them. I asked some of them why they deserted. "Why, sir," said they, "we are forced to be at our exercise from morning till night without having anything to eat; our dress has been taken from us, and we are beaten black and blue."

have been changed. That which had been consecrated by its name (*Ekaterinoslaf*) to the glory of Catherine, was abolished, and this public affront to the memory of his mother is not less so to the heart of Paul.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 There is nothing so trifling to which this *microphilist* does not descend, to shew disrespect to his mother's memory. The persons belonging to her wore rings, on which the date of her decease was enamelled. The Emperor expressed his dissatisfaction at it; and they are obliged to wear rings with the motto of "*Paul consoles me.*"

He carried his want of filial regard so far as to check, by his disapprobation, a society of opulent Russians, who had united at Hamburg, under the auspices of the Russian minister, to erect a poetical monument to the memory of Catherine. The situation in which Major M—— stood at that time, and particularly what he owed to two of his friends, induced him to exert his talents on the occasion. The judges of the Lyceum at Hamburg had the courage to adjudge the second prize to the piece he sent, notwithstanding the proscribed sentiments that beamed through the manner in which he spoke of Catherine, and his silence respecting the comforter she left behind, or his allusions to him.\*

\* The motto of the piece was, "*Fuit illa et ingens gloria Russorum*"; and in it were the following verses:—

Mais j'entends retentir une voix gemissante ;  
 Je vois l'Humanité plaintive et menaçante :  
 Barbares ! arrêtez : eh ! pour qui cet autel ?  
 Voyez ces combattans, ces fers, ces feux, ces armes ;  
 Ah ! mon sang et mes larmes  
 Vont éteindre à vos yeux cet encens criminel !

But hark, a voice that wildly groans and shrieks !  
 Humanity bewailing, threat'ning speaks :  
 " Barbarians, halt ! for whom those bloodstain'd fanes ?  
 Behold yon combatants, yon arms and chains !  
 My blood, my tears, e'en now shall quench the fire,  
 And save each hero from the funeral pyre."

The reader may judge of the confusion, injustice, wretchedness and ruin that such changes of places must produce in Russia; more than twenty thousand gentlemen were thrown out of employ.

Likewise :—

L'aigle puissant du nord, frappé dans sa carrière,  
Se rabat sur la terre :

Il erre dans la nuit ; son astre s'est éteint.

Behold the threat'ning Eagle of the North,  
That soar'd exulting in resistless pow'r,  
Struck in his mid career, descends to earth,  
Wandering in night. His sun shall rise no more.

The secretary of the embassy, when he announced to him the success of his piece, informed him that they were going to send it to the Emperor, and pay His Majesty the compliment of this monument, which would be magnificent, and cost vast sums of money. At the same time he requested him to write an ode in honour of Paul, to be placed at the head of the pieces that had been approved. M—— positively refused this new tribute, which would have been a piece of meanness in him, as he had just been torn from his family, and unjustly proscribed by the Emperor. Not receiving the medal, however, which had been adjudged to him, he sent to the secretary to demand it, saying he would otherwise make a public appeal in the newspapers against such an unworthy proceeding. He knew that his piece had spread through the Court at St. Petersburg, where his name had been discovered, though he had taken the precaution to disguise it in an *anagram*; and this contributed not a little to bring Paul's anathema upon the society at Hamburg. The threat of such a public affront had its effect, and the medal was at length sent, with some excuses for the delay of more than a year, and a confession that the Emperor, having disapproved of this monument to his mother, the illustrious society was afraid of his indignation. Major M—— himself communicated to me these particulars, as well as the letters of the secretary.

If this new reign has been fatal to the army, and to the poor gentry, it has hitherto appeared still more so to the unhappy peasantry, whose chains it endeavours to rivet. If Paul were desirous of taking an example from Prussia, assuredly it should have been that of its treatment of the Poles, whom perfidy had subjected to its dominion.<sup>1</sup> It would not be too

---

1 Let the reader compare the ukase of Paul, which enjoins all his subjects to prostrate themselves at his sight, with the order which the young King of Prussia has just given to his ministers, on his return from Poland, where it was with indignation he found a people debased almost to as low a degree as the Russians. The following is a translation of some fragments of this memorable order, as it appears in the *Jahrbücher der Preussischen Monarchie*, "Annals of the Prussian Monarchy," for January, 1799:

"My dear Ministers of State, Von Voss and Von Schroeter,— During the tour I have lately made in the new provinces of Prussia, I have seen that the lowest class of my subjects in those countries is in a state of civilization far beneath that of the other provinces. These miserable beings are degradingly distinguished by the dirtiness of their houses and clothes, but still more by their cringing manners, and a humility beyond bounds . . . In my eyes, and in those of the law, the lowest of my subjects possesses the dignity of a man. The people of these new provinces are still ignorant of this dignity, for which they are indebted to the Prussian sceptre, because the inferior officers of Government are ignorant of their duty, and abuse their authority. It is a proverbial saying among them, that the Polanders must be governed by the whip; and I have several times heard complaints of such treatment being exercised towards my subjects, while changing horses, &c."

This is the manner in which a King expresses himself, who,

much to say that the Prussian Government gives the Polish vassals more freedom than Kosciuszko could have bestowed on them, had he been victorious. The King of Prussia, far from imitating Catherine or Paul, who distributes these slaves among their courtiers, thus exposing them to more insupportable private tyranny, has annexed them to his domains, and they experience an infinitely milder lot than formerly.<sup>1</sup>

A report being spread that Paul was about to restrict the power of masters over their slaves, and give the peasants of the lords the same advantages as those of the Crown, the people of the capital were much pleased with the hopes of this change. At that juncture an officer set off for his regiment, which lay at Oremberg. On the road he was asked about the

---

feeling as a man, revolted at the sight of a nation of slaves prostrating themselves at his feet. He enjoins his ministers to raise up this degraded nation, by instructing it, civilizing it, and punishing abuses of power.

1 All those Princes who have wished to raise the people and depress the great, the better to establish the authority of government, have endeavoured to annex all seignorial rights and estates to their own domains. The Russian autocrats take the opposite course; they distribute the remains of the Crown among the nobility, to render them more zealous supporters of a government more severe than ever was that of the feudal system. By this ill-judged policy they render themselves incapable of restoring liberty to their slaves at a future period.

new Emperor, and what new regulations he was making. He related what he had seen, and what he had heard; among the rest, mentioning the ukase which was soon to appear in favour of the peasants. At this news, those of Tver and Novgorod indulged in some tumultuous actions, which were considered as symptoms of rebellion. Their masters were violently enraged with them; and the cause that had led them into error was discovered. Marshal Repnin was immediately despatched at the head of some troops against the insurgents; and the officer, who had unwittingly given rise to this false hope, by retailing the news of the city on his road, was soon brought back in confinement. The senate of St. Petersburg judged him deserving of death, and condemned him to be broken, to undergo the punishment of the knout, and, if he survived this, to labour in the mines. The Emperor confirmed this sentence. This is the first criminal trial that was laid before the public; and assuredly it justifies but too well those remains of shame which have hitherto kept secret similar outrages. These circumstances might no doubt have taken place under the reign of Catherine, yet would they have been accompanied with that silence and mystery in which guilt envelops itself. But let us quit this subject for

the less ungrateful one of the eccentricities of the Emperor Paul.

The most prominent of these is that mania which, from his infancy, he displayed for the military dress and exercise, and which has ever since been increasing. This passion in a Prince no more indicates the general or the hero, than fondness for dressing and undressing her doll forebodes the good mother in a girl who passes her days in this amusement. Frederick the Great, the most accomplished soldier of his time, is well known to have had from his infancy the most insuperable repugnance to all those minutiae of a corporal to which his father would have subjected him : this was even the first source of that disagreement which ever subsisted between father and son. It was only by stealth that the young Frederick could indulge himself in studying history and literature with his preceptor, du Han. Frederick William considered every book, except the Psalms of David and his military regulations, as useless or dangerous ; and when he saw the young Frederick, not confining himself to the guard's march, but wishing to exchange his little drum for a harpsichord and his fife for a German flute, he forbade him music. This paternal tyranny had the opposite



effect to what his father wished: it gave more energy to Frederick's repressed desires. He acquired information; he became a hero: his father was never anything more than a corporal.<sup>1</sup>

Peter III. pushed his soldato-mania to a ridiculous point, fancying he made Frederick his model. He loved soldiers and arms as a man loves horses and dogs. He knew nothing but how to exercise a regiment, and never went abroad but in a captain's uniform. This Peter III., at the head of a regiment so well drilled by himself, had not the courage to face a young female, who marched to meet him with a few companies of the very same guards, who were totally ignorant of the Prussian exercise. He lost both his crown and his life without daring to defend them. Certainly a more local, strong and recent example cannot be adduced against this mania, which seems rather to exclude courage and military spirit than be a sign of them. It is very easy to wear a coarse surtout buttoned over the belly, a greasy hat,<sup>2</sup>

---

1 I know some young Russians whose genius the same causes have only served to display: thus a good bow springs from under the hand that bends it.

2 Paul affects to wear a dirty hat: but where lies the merit of this? Since he will have everyone do his duty, why does he not make his *valets de chambre* do theirs, in beating and brushing his old beaver?

and a sword behind the back : a man may even spend the day on the parade caning the soldiers, and abusing the officers — but this would be a satirical caricature of a great king : it would be to represent him as a recruiting officer affecting to give himself airs. But, says Molière :—

Quand sur une personne on prétend se régler,  
C'est par les beaux côtés qu'il lui faut ressembler :  
Et ce n'est pas du tout la prendre pour modèle  
. . . . que de tousser et de cracher comme elle.

When Admiration bids us mimic others,  
We in their virtues should the semblance hit,  
Nor will the sage and fool e'er pass for brothers,  
Because forsooth alike they cough or spit.

There is one part of this great King's conduct of much more utility, and almost as easy to imitate, since it requires neither talents nor genius, but merely goodwill, patience and a love of justice ; this is for history reign to receive, like him, the petitions and letters of his subjects, but particularly to answer them. The perseverance and exactness with which he always adhered to this resolution, which he adopted at the beginning of his reign, cannot be too much admired. Whether he granted or refused, whether he found the petition reasonable or unreasonable, he answered every man who addressed him. I have

seen several of those answers, admirable for their precision and sagacity; yet Frederick found time to do and write other things beside answering letters. He did not rise earlier than Paul; but he stayed only a quarter of an hour on the parade, and often did not go to it at all.

Nothing could be more worthy of a Russian autocrat than to establish a similar communication between himself and his subjects, since arbitrary acts and public violences are nowhere so frequent or so disastrous. Hitherto, every man who had the audacity to present a request immediately to the Sovereign, even under the reign of Catherine, was imprisoned. Paul appeared to have abolished this atrocious law from the day of his accession, and took some papers that were offered him. He even ordered a sort of office to be constructed on the stairs of the palace, into which anyone might put letters; and gave public notice that he would read them all, make the necessary examinations, and then answer them. In consequence, he forbade anyone to disturb him in future on the *wacht-parade*, and ordered those to be arrested who should, after that, approach him with a paper in their hand. The box of the letter-office, however, soon filled, and Paul, contrary to his expectation,

finding more petitions than informers, became tired of doing them justice, and frightened at their number. He did not reflect that they would necessarily diminish if he would employ more readiness and method in answering them.<sup>1</sup> Things returned to their former chaotic state; and the secretaries directed to examine these pieces are, as before, arbiters of the fate of those unfortunate persons who appealed to their master.

The finances of the Empire, exhausted by the prodigalities, and still more by the waste of Catherine's reign, required a prompt remedy; and to this Paul seemed at first to turn his thoughts. Partly from hope, partly from fear, the paper money of the Crown rose a little in value. It was to be supposed that the Grand Duke of all the Russias, who for thirty years had been obliged to live on an income of a hundred thousand roubles (£10,000) per annum, would at least have learned economy perforce; but he was

---

<sup>1</sup> Paul has sometimes given orders respecting the letters he has received, but he does not answer them. I myself have drawn up a few very brief, clear and just requests, for some oppressed persons, which remained unanswered. He now causes his refusals to the petitions he receives to be printed in the *St. Petersburg Gazette*.

soon seen to heap wealth upon some, and lavish favours upon others, with as much profusion as his mother, and with still less discernment. The spoils of Poland continued to add to the riches of men already too wealthy.<sup>1</sup> A man must be acquainted with the inexhaustible sources from which a Russian autocrat can draw his means, not to be struck by the immense gifts he bestowed on his courtiers, and at the same time disgusted at the little he has

---

I am informed that the Emperor, on his coronation, among other gratuities, distributed eighty-two thousand *souls* among a score of people; that is to say, in the language of metals, that he has made presents of tracts of land inhabited and cultivated by eighty-two thousand male slaves; for in Russia a woman is not a soul yet. By these donations, the Emperor cedes the private rights which he claims over these wretched beings and the lands they are obliged to cultivate, reserving to himself only the sovereignty. Now if we suppose the *slave-soul*, or peasant, to bring the *body*, or gentleman who possesses it, only seven roubles clear per annum, which is a very moderate computation, it follows that the Emperor has given away so much of the domains of the Crown as would produce a neat income of five hundred and seventy-four thousand roubles (£57,400), which, considering the nature of the property, is a capital beyond estimation. Catherine, in her profusion in this way, had nearly disposed of all her domains; but the confiscated estates and starosties in Poland constitute the fund to which the present Emperor has recourse. It need not be mentioned that a population of eighty-two thousand males in Russia or Poland must occupy an immense district.

dedicated to the public, to justice, to merited rewards and true beneficence.<sup>1</sup>

The suddenness with which Paul seized the reins of government, and the terror inspired by his known rigour and activity, at first set at fault the dark intrigues of knaves and villains, who had turned the treasures of the State to their own profit. The prevention of the scandalous dilapidations of these treasures would double the amount; and it is to be presumed that, everything being renewed, the robbers will be obliged to suspend their operations for a time; but, when once they are acquainted with the Emperor's course, they will regulate their own accordingly; they will dig other mines, and excavate new drains; pillage and prevarication will revive, and be reduced to a system as before. Theft is a vice inherent in the Russian Government, and springs from the character of the nation, in which manners, probity and public spirit are wanting.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> All that Paul's talents have enabled him to do for the restoration of a sort of equilibrium between his receipts and disbursements, is reduced at last to an exorbitant tax, which he has just laid upon all the classes of his slaves. The poll-tax of the wretched vassals has been doubled, and a new tax has been imposed upon the nobles, which, however, the vassals must ultimately pay.

<sup>2</sup> The French author confesses that, while he was writing

It must be confessed that, morally speaking, the people about Paul are better than those that were about his mother, and that he will be more culpable than she if he allow the same disorders to prevail. It is true that Catherine pretended to guide, and that Paul on the contrary, will suffer himself to be led; he would feel himself humbled, however, in following the advice of a man who wished to appear better informed than himself. The person who has more immediate influence on his actions than his ministers, or even his mistress, will ever have, is a *valet de chambre*, by birth a Turk, made a slave in his infancy and brought up in his house. To this Turk, named Ivan Pavlovitch, the generals and great men are eager to pay their court, as the real fountain of Paul's private favour. Love is the strongest and most excusable of passions: its excesses and abuses, therefore, appear less odious, and the reign of favourites, or of mistresses, will never be so humiliating as that of valets. Beside their bad education, which gives rise to a just prejudice against them, the influence a

---

this, he scarcely expected to find the same infamous conduct triumphing under a *republican form* of government, and in a *regenerated* nation.

Prince allows them has always something mean and repulsive, and savours strongly of the water-closet.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 This Ivan Pavlovitch is at present counsellor of state, and has the title of Excellency. Many lackeys, *Hof* or *Kammer-fouriers*, gentlemen of the bedchamber, are every day rising to the highest posts. Thus extremes meet each other: the Muscovite licentiousness leads to that equality of rights which it considers with horror: but here it is a real calamity. A great Russian lord was accustomed to hold out his hand familiarly to every scullion or shoeblack that he met at Court, styling them *bratt* or *batiousschka*, brother or father. A gentleman expressing surprise at this familiarity, the lord said, "It is from policy, sir; between this and to-morrow, these fellows may become my colleagues." Such is Russian equality; it is that of Tarquin cutting off the heads of his tallest poppies, or of a Sultan creating his water-carrier Prime Vizier.



## CHAPTER V

HAS PAUL REASON TO FEAR THE FATE OF PETER III. ?

*Parallel between Paul and his father—Portrait of the reigning Empress—The Grand Duke Alexander—The Grand Duke Constantine—Zubof—N. Soltikof—Markof—Arkarof—Repin—Suvarof and Valerian Zubof—Traits of the character of Paul and his principal Courtiers or Ministers—His portrait—Anecdotes of his conduct when Grand Duke.*

PAUL, in his mode of life when Grand Duke, and his conduct since his accession, so strongly resembles his father, that, changing names and dates, the history of the one might be taken for the history of the other. Both were educated in a perfect ignorance of business, and resided at a distance from Court, where they were treated as prisoners of State rather than heirs to the Crown; and, whenever they presented themselves, appeared as aliens and strangers, having no concern with the royal family. The aunt of the father (Elizabeth) acted precisely as the mother of the son has done since. The endeavours of each

were directed to prolong their infancy and to perpetuate the feebleness of their minds. The young Princes were both distinguished by personal vivacity and mental insensibility, by an activity which, untrained and neglected, degenerated into turbulence: the father was sunk in debauchery; the son lost in the most insignificant trifles. An unconquerable aversion to study and reflection gave to both that infatuated taste for military parade, which would probably have displayed itself less forcibly in Paul had he been a witness of the ridicule they attached to Peter.<sup>1</sup> The education of Paul, however, was

---

1 A singular opposition may commonly be observed between father and son if any striking feature exist in their characters. A well-disposed son will frequently possess that virtue which is directly opposite to his father's vice, particularly if he has seen its folly or fallen its victim. I could adduce private instances, particularly interesting to myself; but those of three or four successive Kings of Prussia will make more impression on the public. Frederick I. was as remarkable for his politeness and magnificence as his son for his roughness and parsimony. The great King of Prussia avoided both extremes. The grandfather protected and honoured the sciences ostentatiously; the son persecuted them, and endeavoured to render them contemptible. The grandson cherished them, and cultivated them himself. The first was a royal courtier; the second, a royal corporal; the third a royal hero. This contrast between father and son has not been observable for a long time in Russia, as one has not been the other's successor; but it is now about to appear in

much more attended to than that of his father. He was surrounded in infancy by persons of merit, and his youth promised a capacity of no ordinary kind.<sup>1</sup> It is even thought that the singularities which he has since contracted are to be ascribed rather to the modes of life which he has, in a manner, been obliged to adopt, than to the natural faults of his disposition. It must also be allowed that he is exempt from many of the vices which disgraced Peter: temperance and regularity of manners are prominent features of his character; features the more commendable, as they are rarely to be found in a Russian autocrat. To the same cause—education, and his knowledge of the language and character of the nation—is it owing that he differs from his father in other valuable qualities. If he has the wisdom to profit by these advantages, he will not fall into the same errors and misfortunes.

---

a very striking manner. Catherine and Paul are the two extremes and the Grand Duke Alexander promises fair to be at some future day the happy mean between both.

1 Louis XIV. and Frederick the Great loaded with favours and honours those who had superintended their education. The aged Epinus, Paul's tutor, is threatened with the fate of Seneca and Burrhus. That of Colonel la Harpe and Major Masson, who were tutors to his son, would be still less mild should they fall again into the hands of Paul.

The similarity which, in some instances, has marked their conduct towards their wives, is still more striking; and in their amours a singular coincidence of taste is observable. Catherine and Mary were the most beautiful women of the Court, yet both failed to gain the affections of their husbands. Catherine had an ambitious soul, a cultivated mind, and the most amiable and polished manners. In a man, however, whose attachments were confined to soldiers, to the pleasures of the bottle, and the fumes of tobacco, she excited no other sentiment than disgust and aversion. He was smitten with an object less respectable, and less difficult to please. The Countess Vorontzof, fat, ugly in her person, and vulgar in her manners, was more suitable to his depraved military taste, and she became his mistress.<sup>1</sup>

In like manner, the regular beauty of Mary, the unalterable sweetness of her disposition, her unwearied complaisance, her docility as a wife, and her tenderness as a mother, have not been sufficient to prevent Paul from attaching himself to Miss Nelidof, whose disposition and qualities better accord with his own. She is ugly and diminutive; but seems desirous, by

---

<sup>1</sup> She got drunk with him, and swore like a trooper; she squinted, and spat when she was talking.

her wit and address, to compensate for the disadvantages of her person; for a woman to be in love with Paul, it is necessary she should resemble him.<sup>1</sup>

On their accession to the throne, neither the father nor the son were favourites, either of the Court or the nation, yet both acquired immediate popularity and favour. The first steps of Paul appeared to be directed, but improved, by those of Peter. The liberation of Kosciuszko and other prisoners brought to public recollection the recall of Biren, Munich, and Lestocq, with this difference, that Peter III. did not disgrace these acts of clemency and justice by ridiculous violences, or by odious and groundless persecutions. Both issued ukases extremely favourable to the nobility, but from motives essentially different, and little to the honour of the son. The father granted to the Russian gentry those natural rights which every man ought to enjoy; while the object of the son was merely to revive those distinctions which in the present day are become obsolete and ridiculous in the eyes of many.<sup>2</sup> In the conduct

---

<sup>1</sup> He has lately proved fickle. Miss Nelidof, who lived on tolerable terms with the Empress, is dismissed, and a young lady of the name of Lapukhin is the favourite.

<sup>2</sup> Paul has now taken it into his head to create a heraldic nobility in Russia! Formerly this Gothic institution was un-

which he has observed towards the clergy, Paul, however, has shewn himself a superior politician ; instead of insulting the priests, and obliging them to shave their beards, he has bestowed the Orders of the Empire on the bishops, to put them on a footing with the nobility, and flattered the populace and the priesthood by founding churches, by pretended inspiration.<sup>1</sup>

known there. The Tzar Fedor even ordered the patents, of which some families would have availed themselves, to be burned. Have the Russians but now reached the twelfth century ? They were the only nation in Europe, who, in their rapid progress to civilization, bounded over this folly.

I A soldier in the guards, having stood sentry at a door of the summer palace (an old wooden house in which Elizabeth resided), went to his captain, pretending he had a secret to communicate. He informed him that, while he was on duty, he saw a light in the uninhabited apartments of the palace, and presently some person knocked at the door at which he stood, and called him by name. He had the courage to look through the chinks in the door and there beheld St. Michael. The saint ordered him to go to the Emperor, and tell him that he must build him a church on that spot. In consequence, the soldier begged him to speak to the Emperor, or he must take the liberty to do it himself, in obedience to his mission. The officer treated the visionary as a madman, and sent him about his business ; he, however, mentioned the adventure to the major, who thought proper to relate it to Paul. The soldier was called and ordered to repeat his account of his vision. The Emperor told him that St. Michael should be obeyed, for he had already been inspired with the design of building him a church, and

In his military operations, however, his policy appears to have abandoned him, because here he gave the reins to his ruling passion. The quick and total change of discipline he has introduced into his armies, has created him nearly as many enemies as there are officers and soldiers. The preference he gives to the old Germans in his service may prove as fatal to him as it did to his father. In the distrust and suspicions which incessantly haunt him, his inferiority to his father is also evident. One of the first acts of Peter III. was to abolish the political inquisition established by Elizabeth; whereas Paul has prosecuted no scheme with greater alacrity than that of establishing a system of spies, and devising

---

had even the plan prepared. On this he sent for the model of a church which he had ready in his closet. Does not this sound like a legend? Yet this farce took place at the Court of Russia in the month of December, 1796, and the author was, in part, a witness to it. The palace is being pulled down, and a church and a new palace are begun, dedicated to *Monseigneur Michael*.—*Gospodi pomiloi!*\*—The miracle is unfolded when it is known that a cousin of the soldier was one of Paul's *valets de chambre*, and that the soldier, by way of recompense, was promoted to the same post. We may expect soon to see him counsellor of state.

\* The usual exclamation which the Russians make, crossing themselves at the same time, when they see anything extraordinary. It is one of the burdens of the litanies, "Lord have mercy!"

means for the encouragement of informers. The blind confidence of the father was his ruin, but it flowed from a humanity of disposition always respectable. The distrust of the son may not save him : it is the offspring of a timorous mind, which by its suspicions is more apt to provoke than to elude treason.

From the conformity of character observable in so many particulars in these two Princes, we might be led to conclude that the catastrophe of one will be that of the other : but this seems at present not at all probable ; for, striking as is the resemblance between Peter and Paul, the persons who compose their Courts, and the circumstances of the times, are no less strikingly different.

In the first place, the character of Mary, as a wife, is wholly opposite to that of Catherine : sweetness of disposition is her chief characteristic. Her mildness, patience and modesty have been severely proved by the most rigorous and whimsical treatment ; and, perhaps, by the persevering exercise of these qualities, she may in the end triumph. Her time is employed in a succession of duties and occupations suitable to her sex and her dignity. The education of her children, from whom she has too long been reluctantly separated, is at present a source of happiness to her.



Her attention to her husband has enabled her to endure fatigues and exercises the least suitable to her sex and her character. How often has she been seen to attend him on horseback at the wearisome reviews of Gatshina and Pavlofsky? Though exhausted with heat and fatigue, sometimes drenched with rain, or covered with snow, she has still, by her smiles, expressed her acquiescence.<sup>1</sup> She is, perhaps,

---

<sup>1</sup> He frequently posted the Grand Duchess on a height, to serve as a mark or point of attack to his troops, while he defended the approaches. One day, I remember, he placed her thus in the ruinous balcony of an old wooden mansion, round which he disposed his troops for defence. One party of troops he had given to Major Lindener, with orders to make the attack according to his own plan. This plan was to establish the reputation of the major, and Paul prepared for the most able resistance. The Princess, meanwhile, remained fixed on the tower, exposed to a heavy rain. Paul hastened to every point where he expected the enemy, and pranced about amid the rain as proudly as Charles XII. in a shower of musket-balls. One hour after another passed; the rain redoubled its violence, and no enemy appeared. Paul, entertaining a high opinion of his Prussian, presumed that he had made a skilful march behind the wood, to surprise him more effectually. Accordingly he visited, changed and reinforced his advanced posts every moment, and sent out parties to reconnoitre and scour the country. Frequently, a noble impatience getting the better of him or his horse, he galloped a considerable way to meet the enemy, with whose tardiness he began to be dissatisfied. Presently his impatience was changed into rage and vexation. Lindener had taken the field early, and made a long round through the estate

more careful of her time, and dedicates it to more useful purposes, than any other lady in Russia. Music, painting, etching, embroidery, are the arts in which she excels, and which have alleviated the solitude in which she lived. Reading and study are with her not so much a business as a recreation ; and the management of domestic affairs and the distribution of charities, serve happily to occupy her hours. Tall, well made, and still in the prime of life, she is rather handsome than pretty ; she has more majesty than grace, and less wit than sentiment. She is a dutiful daughter and an affectionate

---

of Soltikof, to arrive at the village : but he had gotten his column entangled among the hedges and gardens, which threw it into confusion, and he knew not how to march out, while he had not room to form his line. The aides-de-camp, who came from Paul every moment to order him to make haste, completely confused his mind ; and he could find no resource but to pretend he was seized with a violent colic, hasten home, and leave his troops to themselves. Paul, enraged at having made such an excellent disposition of his forces in vain, spurred on his horse as hard as he could gallop to the palace, there to digest his rage ; leaving his wife, his army, and those whom he had invited to see this famous manœuvre, wet to the skin. They had waited from five in the morning till one in the afternoon ; and much in this manner did Mary spend all her mornings, with one or two young ladies at most ; one of whom, too, was Paul's favourite, and received all the attention of him and his courtiers.

sister, as well as a faithful wife and an excellent mother. Far from forgetting her country and her relations, the splendour which surrounds her, and the distance which separates them, serve but to increase the warmth of her affection and the vividness of her remembrance. Her numerous relations are always in her mind ; her correspondence with them occupies many hours of tranquil happiness, and her felicity is doubled by making those whom she loves partakers of it. She has not, like the ambitious Catherine, flattered the Russians by adopting their manners, their language and their prejudices : she has not attempted to gain the esteem of this nation by despising her own, and blushing at her origin ; but has made herself beloved for her goodness, and respected for her virtues.<sup>1</sup> We might, perhaps, grieve for her as a wife, were it not that the attachment of her charming family ought to be a source of

---

<sup>1</sup> Nothing can be more astonishing than that such a man as Mirabeau could relate, in his " Secret Correspondence," such a silly anecdote of the Grand Duchess of Russia. The young man, who is represented as the hero and relater of the story, was assuredly never in the company of that Princess, or even at the Court of Russia ; and there is no truth in the scenery of this adventure, which would appear flat, ridiculous and unworthy of notice, had it not been related by Mirabeau.

sufficient happiness to her, and Russia may not improbably one day be indebted to her for national content. Her fruitfulness ensures a more tranquil and natural successor, and the generous blood which she has transmuted into the branch of Holstein will mitigate, perhaps, the barbarity which it derives from the house of Romanof.<sup>1</sup>

It appears from this sketch that Paul would have nothing to apprehend from the Empress, even though the love of the nation for her, and its aversion to him, were to increase. The guards and the people would in vain entreat Mary to ascend her husband's throne; she would reject with horror the invitation. Paul, however, never treated her with becoming respect till he became Emperor.<sup>2</sup> The Court then saw

---

<sup>1</sup> What I say of this Princess is the homage of truth: she well knows, and I more strongly feel, it cannot be that of gratitude. It must be confessed, too, that her good qualities are singularly obscured by a petty vanity, which makes her think and act like a person raised from a low station. The Princess Dorothy of Würtemberg, having become Mary of Holstein-Romanof, might dispense with this Gothic haughtiness; for her children, though Grand Dukes, are disqualified by their paternal descent for admission to a chapter in Germany.

<sup>2</sup> This period was soon at an end. I am informed that Mary was put under arrest for twelve hours for having given one of her women some trifling order which Paul did not approve. It appears that this warlike Emperor conducts everything in a military style, even in his bed-chamber.

with astonishment this husband, hitherto so harsh and uncouth, change at once his conduct towards her. On his accession, he granted her the sum of five hundred thousand roubles (£50,000) for her private expenses, promising her at the same time a more ample provision.<sup>1</sup> He solicited the return of Mrs. Benkendorf, whom he had some years before dismissed from the service of his wife under circumstances of great indignity. To furnish Mary with occupations suitable to the benevolence of her disposition and her sex, he appointed her superior of the convent of young ladies. In short, he treated her with the respect and attention he ought always to have shewn her. A conduct, so unexpected from Paul, caused great sensations. Various motives have been assigned for this change: but whatever may be the true cause, this at least is certain, that in his treatment of his wife, Paul wisely differs from his father, who, after his accession to the throne, behaved to Catherine with the same neglect and disrespect as before.<sup>2</sup>

---

1 As Grand Duchess, she had only sixty thousand roubles (£6,000) a year; and with this sum was more generous, and did more good, than at present.

2 It must be confessed, however, that Catherine, whose amours with Stanislaus Poniatofsky were a scandal to the whole Court, gave her husband strong reasons for ill-treating her; whilst the conduct of Mary is irreproachable.

We have already seen that Catherine was prevented by death from the execution of another design, which would have proved more fatal to Paul, but that the youth and natural good disposition of his eldest son defeated it; who, by the purity of his morals and his personal charms, inspires a high degree of admiration. That ideal character which enchants us in "Telemachus" is almost realized in him. He may be reproached, too, with the same faults which Fenelon has bestowed on his imaginary pupil<sup>1</sup>; but these are, perhaps, not so much faults as the absence of certain qualities not yet developed in him, or which have been stifled in his heart by the miserable companions which have been allotted him. He inherits from Catherine magnanimity of sentiment and an unalterable equality of temper; a mind just and penetrating, and uncommon discretion; with the alloy, however, of a cautious disposition, a circumspection unsuitable to his age, and which might be taken for dissimulation, did it not evidently proceed rather from the delicate situation in which he was placed between his father and grandmother, than from his

---

1 "With a noble and well-disposed heart, he appeared neither obliging nor sensible to friendship, nor liberal, nor grateful for the pains taken on his account: neither was he prompt to acknowledge merit, &c."—"Telemachus," Book XVI.

heart, which is naturally frank and ingenuous. He possesses his mother's stature and beauty, as well as her mildness and benevolence, while in none of his features does he resemble his father. Paul, conjecturing the intentions of Catherine in favour of this son, has always felt coldly towards him; at the same time he discovers in him no resemblance of character, and no conformity of taste with himself; for Alexander appears to do what his father requires of him from a principle of filial duty rather than compliance with his own inclinations. His humanity has acquired him the hearts of the soldiers, his good sense the admiration of the officers: he is the constant mediator between the Emperor and those unhappy persons who, by some trifling neglect, may provoke his anger. He requires not the dignity of Grand Duke of Russia to inspire sentiments of love and interest; nature has richly endowed him with the most amiable qualities, and his character of heir to the greatest Empire in the world cannot render them indifferent to humanity. Heaven, perhaps, destines him to render thirty millions of people more free than they are at present, and more worthy of being so.

His character, however, though amiable, is passive. He wants the courage and confidence to discover the

man of merit, always modest and unobtrusive ; and it is to be feared that the most importunate and impudent, who are generally the most ignorant and vicious, will find little difficulty in procuring access to him. Yielding too easily to the impulses of others, he does not sufficiently consult his own heart and understanding. He appears to have lost his relish for instruction in losing his masters, and especially Colonel la Harpe, his first preceptor, to whom he owes all the knowledge he has acquired. A too premature marriage has contributed to diminish his energy ; and it is probable that, notwithstanding his good qualities, he will become in time the dupe of his courtiers, and even his valets.

After this account of his character, it cannot be supposed that he will ever undertake of himself the odious project with which Catherine wished to inspire him. However, during the last illness of the Empress, and for several days after her death, he was detained near the person of his father with marks of tenderness, but not without symptoms of suspicion. Scarcely was he allowed an hour in the day to visit his young Duchess. The Emperor surrounded him with officers on whom he thought he could rely, and removed from their places all those who were not his creatures and



spies ; he took from him his own regiment to give him another, and appointed him military governor of St. Petersburg, naming at the same time for his assistant or guardian, the ferocious Araktscheief. The revenue of the young Prince, which hitherto had not exceeded thirty thousand roubles (£3,000)<sup>1</sup> was increased to two hundred thousand (£20,000) ; and his father, by employing him in many trifling concerns, which detained him about his person nearly the whole day long, was manifestly desirous of watching over him himself. It is impossible not to praise the Emperor for having thus attached to himself, by means so mild and natural, the object of his unjust suspicions ; and we are pleased with these marks of affection for his children, to whom for fifteen years he never felt the resolution to give the least proofs of his regard.<sup>2</sup>

---

1 The great, the generous Catherine, whose magnificence astonished the universe, and who gave roubles by millions to her favourites, left her son and grandson in want of necessaries. Thirty thousand roubles in paper for a Grand Duke of all the Russias ! equal to sixty thousand livres French money (£2,500). Sometimes they were given in gold or silver ; but they who had the management of the revenues of the young Princes took care to play the usurer, so that in their hands they were diminished nearly one-half.

2 I am informed that the Grand Duke Alexander has just been placed by Paul in the office of Besborodko, as Frederick the Great was by his Officer in the office of one of the Prussian

The vulgar, who in general judge from the most deceitful appearances, perceiving in the Grand Duke Alexander a reserve and circumspection of conduct, which they mistook for pride, were at first charmed with his younger brother Constantine. This Prince does not possess the advantage of so agreeable and prepossessing a person as his brother ; grimace serves him for wit, and buffoonery procures him popularity. He exhibits more than one trait of resemblance to the unhappy Tzarovitch Alexis, especially in his aversion for the sciences, and the rudeness of his manners. He possessed, however, the germs of a sound heart and understanding, which his first masters neglected to cultivate, and which Colonel la Harpe attempted in vain to improve, by extirpating the weeds that checked their growth. It will be happy for Constantine, when he arrives at an age of more discretion, should he revive and cultivate them himself.

In other respects, he is a son worthy of his father : the same eccentricities, the same passions, the same severity and the same turbulence, distinguish him ; but he will never possess the information which

ministers, to perform the functions of a simple clerk. Whether it be to procure him instruction, or to humble and punish him, the young Prince will be one day the better for it.

his father has acquired, nor his capacity, though he promises in time to equal, and even to surpass him, in the art of manœuvring a dozen automatons. Can it be believed that a Prince of seventeen, lively and vigorous, would, on the morning after his marriage to a young and beautiful woman, leave his bride at five o'clock to manœuvre in the court of his palace a couple of soldiers, who were placed there as sentinels, and upon whom he inflicted at the same time repeated strokes of his cane? Yet such was the conduct of the Grand Duke Constantine. I know not whether this military mania promises a good general, but sure I am that it is a proof of a very bad husband.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Some time before his marriage he had a detachment of soldiers given him for his amusement. After having tormented these poor wretches for some months, he went so far as to cane the major who commanded them. The major had the courage to complain to Count Soltikof, and the favourite related the story to the Empress. She ordered her grandson under arrest, and took from him his soldiers, who were not returned to him till after his marriage.

Many other stories might be told of this young Prince, but it would be only repeating the vulgar tricks of a boy without education. His grandmother perceived it too late to remedy it. In his childhood he bit and struck his masters; now he strikes the officers at their exercise, and knocks out the teeth of the poor soldiers. The King of Sweden being, with all the Court, at a ball given by Samoilof, he said to him, "Do you know in whose house you are?—That of the greatest w—— in St. Petersburg." His grandmother put him under arrest.

Paul, though he found in his own family no cause to fear the misfortunes of his father, or any attempt dangerous to his tranquillity, had not equal reason to be satisfied on the part of the nobility. It is certain that he was disliked by them all, and for ten years was a subject for ridicule at the Court of his mother: but Potemkin was no more. A diminutiveness in virtue as in vice, was the characteristic of all who approached the throne: no one possessed that strength of capacity which is necessary to accomplish a revolution, and all wanted that energy which great crimes demand. Catherine could, with more justice than the Countess of Muralt, have bestowed on her ministers the epithet which she gave to her wits.<sup>1</sup> A slight sketch of each of these personages will be sufficient to prove the truth of what I have advanced.

Count and Prince Zubof, the last favourite of Catherine, was thirty years of age and upwards. He was far from possessing the genius and ambition of Orlof and Potemkin, though in the end he united in his person more power and credit than these celebrated favourites had ever enjoyed. Potemkin was

---

<sup>1</sup> It is well known that she called them *Les dunces*.

indebted for his elevation almost solely to himself. Zubof owed his to the infirmities of Catherine. He increased in power, in riches and in credit, because the activity of Catherine was diminished, her vigour abated and her understanding impaired. During the last years of her life, this young man found himself literally Emperor of all the Russias. He had the folly to wish, or to appear, to direct everything; but, having no knowledge of the routine of affairs, he was obliged to reply, to those who asked him for instructions, "*Sdélaité kak prégedé*—Do as before." Nothing equalled his haughtiness but the servility of those who strove to prostrate themselves before him; and it must be acknowledged that the meanness of the Russian courtiers has always surpassed the impudence of the favourites of Catherine. All crouched at the feet of Zubof: he stood erect and thought himself great. Every morning a numerous Court besieged his doors and filled his ante-chambers. Veteran generals and grandees of the Empire did not blush to caress his most insignificant valets.<sup>1</sup> Stretched with indecent negligence on a sofa, his little finger in his nose,

---

<sup>1</sup> These valets have been frequently seen to beat back the officers and generals who crowded round the doors, and prevented them from being shut.

his eyes vacantly turned towards the ceiling, this young man, of a cold and vain physiognomy, scarcely deigned to pay attention to those who surrounded him. He amused himself with the tricks of his ape—which leaped on the shoulders of his degraded courtiers—or conversed with his buffoon; while the veterans, under some of whom he had been a sergeant—the Dolgorukys, the Gallitzins, the Soltikofs, and all who were distinguished for their exploits or their crimes—standing around him, waited with profound silence till he condescended to turn his eyes towards them, that they might again prostrate themselves before him. The name of Catherine figured in his conversation, but he scarcely deigned to pay the heir to the crown that exterior respect which the etiquette of the Court required; and even Paul was forced to humble himself before a petty officer of the guards, who, but a short time before, had begged his pardon for allowing his dog to be beaten.<sup>1</sup> To obtain money or favours for his

---

<sup>1</sup> Paul had a dog of which he was fond. This dog, roaming round the palace, attempted to snatch a piece of meat from a trumpeter belonging to the guards. The soldier gave him a blow over the head with his trumpet. The dog ran howling and bloody to the apartments of Paul, who was in a rage on hearing the story. "Ah!" cried he, "everything belonging to me, everything I love, is an object of persecution. I have but one dog,

dependents, the Grand Duke Constantine paid him the most assiduous court. Meanwhile, none of the twelve favourites of Catherine appeared so poorly endowed in person and mind as Zubof. In his elevation he displayed no genius, no virtues, no passions, unless we account as such the vanity and avarice which distinguished him; accordingly, when his power expired, his emptiness was apparent. The immense wealth of his family, and the vast estates extorted by his father from the landholders of his provinces, are the monuments which he has left of his administration.<sup>1</sup> The death of the Empress reduced him in a moment to the obscurity from which she had drawn him; as the ephemeron of a day, produced

---

and they want to kill it. Let the officer on guard be sent to me, and let him be punished!" The officer on guard at that time was Zubof, who, informed of the rage of the Grand Duke, went and threw himself at the feet of Soltikof, his patron, to beg he would go with him and solicit his pardon. It was with difficulty Soltikof could obtain it; for Paul was persuaded that his dog had been beaten out of hatred to him, and because he was detested by the guards. The trumpeter maintained that he did not know to whom the dog belonged; and this Paul took for a fresh insult, for which he would certainly have inflicted a severe punishment, had it been in his power.

1 Zubof's father was made a judge; and, to enrich himself, he bought up all the old causes in the court, or made the parties relinquish them to him, and then decided them himself, or caused them to be decided, in his favour.

by the sun, flutters in his kindly beams, but cannot survive the passing breeze. Zubof lamented Catherine as a son bewails the loss of his mother ; and this was the only moment of his life in which he appeared at all interesting. It is also just to observe that, mingling with the crowd, he discovered more readily the station that was suitable to his insignificance than the courtiers did theirs, which ought to have been still by his side. They shewed themselves yet more base than he was humbled ; and though for the first few days his ante-chambers were deserted, for a long time afterwards, when he appeared at Court, the stupid courtiers made way for him, and prostrated themselves before him as before a Sovereign ; so difficult is it for slaves to recover the dignity of manhood ! We must do him the farther justice to acknowledge that he did not, like a Mentchikof and a Biren, people the deserts of Siberia ; though, at the instigation of Esterhazy and other French emigrants, he committed acts of great injustice and inquisitorial violence ; and the calamities of Poland may in part be considered as his work.

The Emperor, who, at the moment of his accession, treated him with astonishing respect, confirmed him, in the most flattering terms, in all his employ-



ments ; bestowed on his brother the first Order of Russia, solely for having undertaken a journey to Gatshina ; made him a present of one of his military uniforms—the Emperor, I say, having measured his man, perceived that he had nothing to fear from him ; accordingly, the seal was suddenly put on his chancery, and it was the Grand Duke Constantine, lately his most assiduous courtier, who executed this commission, as officer of the police, with all the rudeness which is natural to him.<sup>1</sup> His secretaries were banished or driven from the Court<sup>2</sup> ; his creatures exiled, or im-

---

1 It is to be observed that Zubof, who had all places in his hands, and the secretaries, who had all public affairs in theirs, were sent off in four-and-twenty hours, without making them give any account, or demanding any information. The confusion this occasioned will appear in the sequel.

2 The two most famous are Altesti and Gribofsky. The former is a Ragusan, whom the Russian minister, Bolkunof, took from a merchant's counting-house in Constantinople to employ him in his office. When war was declared, he came to St. Petersburg to solicit employment, and got into the service of Zubof, who was growing in favour. He understood several languages, and was not destitute of sense. He soon became the penman of Zubof, and even of the Empress. A pamphlet, which he wrote in French against the King and revolutionists of Poland, and in which he treated the former as a factionary, the latter as Jacobins, stuffing it with epithets, lies, stupidities, and flattery, established his reputation and his fortune. This libel was spread abroad like a manifesto. Titles, Orders of Knighthood and slaves were presently lavished on Altesti. Not contented with these

prisoned<sup>1</sup>; and all the officers of his staff, or of his suite, upwards of two hundred in number, were obliged to join immediately their respective corps, or give in

---

gifts, he enriched himself prodigiously by other means. The Polish confederates, the governments, the Cossacks, &c., were eager to purchase his protection and services by hard ducats. All the affairs of Poland were in his hands, and on him depended wealth, liberty and life; for he made out the lists of the proscribed. He grew uncommonly haughty and impudent; but an impertinent trick he played upon Count Golowin, who had the courage to complain of it, at length ruined him. He had orders to retire to his estates; but Zubof had obtained his recall, and he was on the point of re-entering into office a few days before the death of Catherine. One of the first orders of Paul was an injunction to him to depart in twenty-four hours. Altesti has talents, but is ungrateful: he occasioned the disgrace of Bolkunof, his first benefactor.

Gribofsky, the other secretary, was a Russian. He had not the understanding of his colleague, but perhaps a better heart, and acquired nearly equal influence. He was the son of a clergyman, and began his career as a copyist in the office of Potemkin. In less than two years, under Zubof, he attained the rank of colonel, and his luxury and expensive mode of living astonished and disgusted all St. Petersburg. The finest ladies admired his person, and he was flattered by the greatest lords. He kept a band of music, buffoons, mistresses, and horses. In the spring he gave suppers, with desserts of fruit not to be seen at the Empress's table; and I was present at an entertainment where everyone paid his shot, the dessert of which, furnished by him, was reckoned, in consequence of the season, at five hundred roubles (£50).

1 Among others, Kapief, a young man who would have deserved a better fate, had his heart been equal to his head;

neir resignation. To remove him with less indignity from the palace, a large mansion was given him as a present, and all his offices were then withdrawn. He did not himself give in his resignation of thirty different employments till in reality he no longer held them. The Emperor created Nicholas Soltikof a field-marshal, and restored to his office the administration of military affairs, which had been taken from it by Zubof. It was then that the disorders and abuses which pervaded the service were discovered. The favourite, who, to enrich himself, carried on a war in Persia, the conducting of which was entrusted to his brother,<sup>1</sup> had not condescended to submit to the College of War the ordinary reports; and the troops which he had marched towards Galicia were equally neglected; so that, when it became necessary to make a new arrangement of the army, it was not known where the greater part of the regiments were, and still less in what condition they would be found.

---

he was accused of having said to one of his friends, whom he met in Paul's new uniform, "Good morning. What! are you going to a masquerade?"

1 At the Empress's table, during the visit of the King of Sweden, the conversation turned on some news just brought by a courier. "It is but a trifle," said Zubof to a Swede: "My brother sends us word that he has gained a battle and conquered a province; that is nothing new."

Officers who had to rejoin their corps knew not to what quarter of the world they should set off to find them, and in vain attended the offices to obtain the necessary information.<sup>1</sup>

A few weeks after, Zubof obtained permission, or rather received orders, to quit Russia. Like all his predecessors, he went into Germany to exhibit the brilliants, the Orders, and the portraits which he received from Catherine; but of all the gifts of his old mistress, the roubles are those which he has used with most discretion. After having taken with him a girl disguised as a valet, he fell in love at Tœplitz with a

---

1 This was frequently the case in Russia; but the following will excite more astonishment:—A Frenchman, the Chevalier Roger, having solicited Count Soltikof, through the medium of Major M——, to give him the post of commandant of some remote place, as he wished for such a retirement, where he might live with his wife more cheaply, the minister gave orders to see whether any such place was vacant. Being informed that Fort Peter and Paul, in the Government of Oremburg, was without a commandant, Roger was appointed to the post, and set off. Some months after, Major M——. received a letter from Roger in the following words: "I am arrived in the country where my fort was said to be; but judge of my surprise on being informed that it was destroyed by Pugatshef twenty years ago, and exists no longer. Finding myself in a desert with my family, without an asylum and without resource, I have been obliged to return to Oremburg." This letter was shewn to the minister, who gave Roger another post.

pretty emigrant of the name of Roche-Aimon: but he there soon became acquainted with the young Princesses of Courland, who, with the grace and beauty they inherit from their mother, and the immense fortunes which their father will leave them, are the most desirable heiresses in Europe. He endeavoured, accordingly, to pay his court to the old Duke, whom a little before he had attempted to strip of his sovereignty, and towards whom he had affected so much haughtiness at St. Petersburg. The Duke expressed to him his resentment and contempt; but Zubof, unaccustomed to meet with obstacles, conceived the design of carrying off the eldest Princess by force. Whether, however, the Duke complained to the Emperor, or Paul was actuated by other motives, he despatched an order to Zubof to return to Russia; and it is probable that the last favourite of Catherine has, by this time, acted his last part.

Count Nicholas Soltikof, field-marshal, minister of war, and grand-master to the young Grand Dukes.

\* \* \* \* \*

The old vice-chancellor, Ostermann, whom Paul hastened to advance to the post of chancellor, in order to get rid of him, burdened with old age and infirmi-

ties, no longer appeared at Court but as a remembrance of past times. He was far from acting under Catherine the part which his father had played under the reign of Anne, and from deserving the same disgrace from Paul which his father had merited from Elizabeth. He had the name only of vice-chancellor, and the despatch of some passports which were given him to sign. Diplomatic and foreign affairs were divided in the office of Zubof between Besborodko and Markof, who were the actual authors of all the ministerial papers; and the first of whom, particularly, enjoyed an immense credit, which even balanced that of the favourite.

Besborodko and Markof were perfect contrasts to each other. The one was awkward, clownish, negligent, disorderly, his stockings about his heels, and had the gait of an elephant; though richly habited, he appeared always as if he had dressed himself at the conclusion of a debauch, which still oppressed him with the stupidity of drowsiness. The other was so minutely attentive to dress that he might pass for the ridiculous marquis of some of our comedies, and so absurdly affected that he never entered a room or bowed but according to the rules of a dancing-master, never walked but on his toes, and never took snuff without

displaying the brilliants which sparkled on his fingers. When he spoke, too, it was always in the ear of the person with whom he discoursed ; his conversation consisted of *bons mots*, his answers of points ; and the same study and affectation were perceptible in his attempts at wit as in his dress and manners.

Besborodko, notwithstanding the depravity of his morals, is active, and occasionally laborious. Advanced from the situation of clerk in the chancery to the rank of Prime Minister,<sup>1</sup> he is well acquainted with the routine of affairs, and writes with facility ; but the negligence and disorder which characterize his person are equally perceptible in all the offices under his administration, and particularly in the management

---

<sup>1</sup> At first a writer in the office of Romanzof, he became secretary to Catherine, and the following is said to have led the way to his fortune. Having been ordered one day to draw up an ukase, he forgot it, and appeared before the Empress without it. On her asking for it, Besborodko, without being disconcerted, took from his pocket a sheet of blank paper, from which he began to read, as if it contained the ukase in question. Catherine, satisfied with the language, asked for the paper that she might sign it, and was much astonished to find it blank. This facility of extemporaneous composition struck her ; and, far from reproaching the secretary with his negligence or deceit, she made him minister of state, for knowing the style of an ukase by heart, and having had the boldness to impose it on her.

of posts, of which he is director-general, and which is an office open to the inspection of every one.<sup>1</sup>

Before his appointment, it was the best conducted public institution in Russia: under his administration it will soon become the worst. His office is a devouring gulf, from which nothing returns; and the advantages which principally distinguish his house are the multitude of entrances and secret staircases by which he contrives to escape in quitting, or to shun on entering, the unhappy expectants, who wait whole days in the ante-chamber.<sup>2</sup> It is necessary to have the clue of Ariadne to reach this Minotaur; who, without doubt, would be found at the extremity of his labyrinth, engaged in making some young beauty his prey.

If the morals of Markof are not edifying, it must

---

1 Of all parts of the country, the estates of the director-general of the post were those where horses were never to be had, and where travellers were sure to be *taken in*.

2 It is said that an attorney, not being able to get sight of him, at length contrived to slip into his carriage, and wait for him there. Besborodko, astonished at the boldness of the scheme, heard the man's tale, and promised to make his business known to the Empress; but the man would not quit his post, and remained in the carriage till Besborodko came out of the palace, that he might have an answer. Report says it was a favourable one.



be admitted that he does not traverse the *Metschansky*<sup>1</sup> like Besborodko. He is attached to a tragic actress of the name of la Hus, who has great influence over him, and who at least endeavours to be respectable in the character of mother, which her admirer often succeeds in conferring upon her.<sup>2</sup> On the talent which is ascribed to these two ministers, of being able, the one to translate impromptu into Russ, the other into French, the ministerial papers, I set but little value. All the compositions I have read of the one or of the other, especially of Markof, have neither been distinguished for elegance of style nor clearness of expression. I do not speak of logic, the details which they have had to give having been generally too absurd to assort with it. Besides, under Catherine II. Russian diplomatists did not require splendid talents. She employed two means—more persuasive than either argument or eloquence—threats and money, the effects of which are always fear and corruption. The pre-

---

<sup>1</sup> The name of the quarter of St. Petersburg in which girls of the town most abound.

<sup>2</sup> The Emperor, as a refinement of vengeance, forbade la Hus to accompany Markof in his exile, saying she belonged to the Court, and not to him. This tragic actress, who possesses considerable talents, had converted the French theatre into an aristocracy, over which she presided.

judice of many parts of Europe, and especially of Germany, in favour of Russia is astonishing. One might be led to conclude from it that the Cabinet of St. Petersburg was composed of men of superior abilities: the Court of Vienna crouches beneath its influence, and that of Berlin has not yet been able to dismiss its fears and respect. Doubtless, if the intelligent statesmen of Germany could have a clear view of those men who have dazzled them, they would be ashamed of having so long mistaken the false lustre of a corrupted throne for the true radiance of genius, paper for money, threats for greatness, and presumption for ability.

Besborodko, who had always worn shoes and buckles like Paul, and who was also extremely rich and powerful, was at first treated with respect.<sup>1</sup> Markof, who did not possess these advantages to the same degree, was dismissed with indignity and publicly disgraced. He is the same person who was formerly sent from Holland to Paris, where he is still remembered by the appellation of "the stupid Markof."

---

<sup>1</sup> He was made a *Prince*, and was worthy of being one. He continued Paul's Prime Minister; and it was he who, in the name of his master, declared war on the French Republic, citing as a motive decrees, which I believe are known only to himself. He is now dead.

The present Count Samoilof, attorney-general of the Empire, had no other merit to distinguish him than that of being the nephew of Potemkin, and bearing a slight and deceitful resemblance to him. His capacity was unequal to the duties of his office, in right of which he was grand treasurer and president of the Senate, and of all the Courts of the Empire. It was against his own inclination that he was called from the army to fill these civil employments. He acknowledged that he did not possess the necessary talents ; but his deficiency was his chief recommendation, for a passive agent was wanted, one who should be unable, from want of capacity, to counteract the views of Catherine or her favourites. It was at his house that the infamous Inquisition reassembled, which Anne erected under the name of the *Secret Chancery*, which Peter III. thought it his duty to abolish, which Catherine revived under another form, and the worthy members of which Paul carefully disperses in the ante-chambers of particular houses. The palace of Samoilof, which is one of the most elegant in St. Petersburg, contains several prisons for the detention of accused persons, where they are safely kept till they can privately be disposed of. It is apparently on this account alone that many consider

it as a public building. In other respects Samoïlof was insignificant, and like the ass carrying reliques. Paul, to reward him for the readiness with which he caused the oath of fidelity to be taken by the Senate, bestowed on him four thousand peasants, under pretence that his mother had already promised them. Some days after he was suddenly removed from his place, and Prince Kurakin appointed his successor.

But the man against whom the blood and tears of thousands of victims cried most loudly for vengeance, he who ought to have suffered first beneath the axe of justice, if the successor of Catherine had been endowed with firmness, equity, and humanity, was Arkarof, Governor-general of St. Petersburg. This man, or rather, this savage, had distinguished himself for a long time by a brutality of conduct worthy of an executioner of Attila. He was Governor of Tver, where he exercised a system of robbery, the details of which would excite horror and appear incredible, when Catherine, towards the end of her life, placed him near her person. This is the man whom she judged worthy to be the guardian of her crown, when the French Revolution, the Zubofs, the Esterhazys, and perhaps her own remorse, began to fill her with suspicions and terror. He soon displayed, in a more extensive field, those horrid qualities which had

been the scourge of the provinces of Moscow and Tver. Upon the death of Catherine, the fall of Zubof, and the accession of Paul, the punishment of this monster was expected as an event that could not fail to take place. Innumerable victims of his tyrannies cast themselves at the feet of Paul, and demanded justice and vengeance. The Emperor, however, granted no redress to complaints of abuse of power or oppression, but contented himself with commanding Arkarof to pay some debts. Of all those who enjoyed the confidence of the mother, he was, by a horrible exception in favour of his talents, the only one who obtained the confidence of the son. He was confirmed in all his old, and even raised to new, employments. Nevertheless, the complaints of honest men, and the cries of the people, increased against him. It is said that Paul, when on his way to Moscow to be crowned, found the road strewed with petitions against this new Sejanus.<sup>1</sup>

From this account of four or five persons who held the reins of Government at the death of Catherine, it appears that Paul had nothing to apprehend from them : all of them were rich, their fortunes made, and none of them young. It cannot, however, be too carefully

---

1 He is now in disgrace, though not for his crimes.

observed with what eagerness Paul still loaded with wealth these blood-suckers of the State before he discarded them. His motives are obvious: as soon as he thought he had no longer anything to fear from them, he disgraced them. The sudden death of his mother prevented any other party from forming at Court, and there was no individual at the head of the armies in a situation to undertake anything. The three generals-in-chief, who commanded then the principal armies of the Empire, were as remote from each other, by means of their different manners, views and characters, as by the immense distance which actually separated them.

The most celebrated was Prince Nicholas Repnin, whose name has so often resounded through Europe conjunctly with that of the celebrated Romanzof.<sup>1</sup> He

<sup>1</sup> I make no mention, likewise, of that old warrior, whom the ingratitude of Catherine, who was indebted to him for her first triumphs, will render for ever celebrated, no less than his own exploits. He was himself dying at the time of the Empress's decease; and, though he had the command of an army, his debility rendered him inactive. Paul wore mourning for him three days, and ordered all his army to do the same. For twenty years he had left off visiting the Court; and, whether in retirement or in the camp, led a life as selfish as philosophic, for he is less to be honoured as a husband or a father than as a general. He parted from his wife, and remained as much a stranger to his family as la Fontaine. One of his sons, having finished his studies, came to the army to him to ask a commission. "Who are you?" said

was, with this veteran warrior, the only general of signal merit in the armies of Catherine, whose appearance and person did not exhibit a perfect contrast to their reputation. In the last war but one against the Turks he acted a brilliant part as a general, and displayed great abilities as a negotiator at Constantinople. He was afterwards distinguished in Poland by as much politeness as haughtiness. He then submitted ignominiously to the ascendancy of Potemkin, who treated him as a respectable character of past times. In his old age, he still further diminished his early reputation by an attachment to the mysteries of Martinism and the Illuminés; and we are at a loss to determine whether it was the humility of a devotee, the baseness of a courtier, or the stoicism of a patriotic hero, that enabled him to bear the insolence of Potemkin and the enmity of Catherine, who, while they availed themselves of his military talents, loaded him with insults. He had incurred the hatred of Catherine by declaring in favour

---

Romanzof.—“Your son.”—“Oh, very well! you are grown up, I see.” After a few more questions *equally* paternal, the young man asked where he should take up his abode, and what he was to do. “Why, to be sure, you are acquainted with some officer or other in the camp!” said his father. It is a fact no less singular that his son, Sergius Romanzof, returning from his embassy to Sweden, asked Nicholas Soltikof for a letter of recommendation to his father, that he might be well received by him.

of Paul, and advising him to assert his rights to the Crown, of which his mother had only been proclaimed guardian and Regent. In the last war against the Turks, Repnin acted a very inferior part, yoking himself voluntarily to the car of Potemkin, lest he should otherwise not be harnessed at all; for he was resolved to serve, though they might be even unwilling to employ him. In the ante-chambers of the favourites he prostituted his laurels and his white hairs, more than a young officer who has still his fortune to make. How different was Repnin here to Repnin when ambassador at Warsaw, giving audience to the King of Poland in his dressing-gown!<sup>1</sup> or rather, it was the same character, for the haughtiest persons will always be found to be the most servile.

When Potemkin, however, was detained from the camp by the pleasures and festivities of St. Petersburg, as has been already mentioned, Repnin, to whom he had

---

<sup>1</sup> One day, the King coming to pay him a visit, he ran and put on a morning-gown to receive him. After a trifling excuse and a slight bow, he turned his back to the looking-glass, which was opposite Stanislaus, acting in a manner that would have disgraced a Merry-Andrew, and which delicacy forbids me to mention. At Riga, he received d'Artois almost as rudely, pretending not to know him, and leaving him alone by the fire. He was piqued at the air of superiority which the French Prince assumed, and at his not saluting the guard, which paid him military honours.



left the command of the army during his absence, so far emancipated himself as to neglect the order he had received to remain inactive. He suddenly passed the Danube, and by a skilful march, surprised and defeated the grand army of the Vizier Yussuf. This gallant and successful action revived the faded laurels of Repnin. The Court resounded with his praises: they compared this bold and decisive campaign with those of Potemkin, who was content every winter to attack some fortresses, the capture of which cost so much blood, and who had never found a Turkish army to fight with. Roused from his lethargy by this blow, which disgraced and threatened him, Potemkin abandoned his pleasures, and entered into Moldavia. His interview with Repnin was a terrible explosion, which the conqueror of the Turks sustained with more firmness than was expected of him. But he was driven from the army, and obliged to acquiesce in his dismissal, for having gained a most decisive victory and forced the Turks to solicit an ignominious peace—such was still the influence of Potemkin and the condescension of the ungrateful Catherine! On the death of Potemkin, which happened shortly after, Repnin repaired to St. Petersburg, and degraded his old age and his honours in the ante-chamber of Zubof, who, flattered to see the old warrior in the number of his

•

assiduous courtiers, appointed him Governor-general of Livonia. In the consternation and rage into which Catherine was thrown by the massacre of the Russians in Warsaw, he received orders to collect the regiments of his province and to invade Poland. He was at this period the only general of great reputation, and the oldest in the army: he had the further satisfaction of seeing his Sovereign, contrary to her inclination, obliged to employ him. The regular and cautious march, however, of Repnin, through Lithuania, did not accord with the impatient vengeance of Catherine. She thirsted for blood, for the blood of all the inhabitants of Warsaw; and she let loose from another quarter the furious Suvarof, who, as far as the gates of Prague, strewed his route with carcasses. Repnin then received the severest insult he had ever swallowed, but he digested it as readily as former ones. Suvarof was created field-marshal, and appointed commander over the man whose orders the day before he had received, and by whom he was despised.<sup>1</sup> Catherine added even raillery to insult,

---

1 Suvarof caused the first report sent him by Repnin to be read aloud to him two or three times over in the presence of his staff, making a thousand antics, pretending to be deaf, that the reader might raise his voice, so astonished was he at receiving a report from Prince Repnin, whom he thus cruelly rallied. Catherine was always very despotic, and always made seniority give way to favour.

by making a present of a house to Repnin, for having been passed over in this appointment. The whole army resented this treatment of the veteran; several generals remonstrated, and Count John Soltikof, with generous pride, resigned his commission. Repnin alone—Repnin, who had the most reason to be offended, and was most capable of making it felt, who could with impunity show that he was susceptible of resentment and honour—like a Stoic or Christian, submitted to this disgrace.

On his accession, Paul at length created him field-marshal, and the last warlike exploit of Repnin was the executing military vengeance on some villages in the Government of Novgorod, on the occasion to which we alluded in a former page.

Repnin, who has shewn himself a great general, as well as an imperious minister and a servile courtier, possesses some personal qualities rarely to be met with in Russian generals. Not only his figure, but his

---

At the death of Potemkin, Kamenskoi, one of her best generals, took the command of the army as a matter of right, and sent his first report accordingly. He said, "Having taken the command in consequence of my seniority, &c."; against which Catherine wrote in the margin, "Who gave you orders?" He then spoke of the disorder which he found prevailing among the troops, and in the margin Catherine wrote, "He dared not say a word while the Prince was alive." In answer to his report, Kamenskoi received orders to quit the army.

manners and carriage are noble. His heart is humane,<sup>1</sup> and he is destitute alike of the Muscovitish grossness of his colleagues towards their inferiors,<sup>2</sup> and that rapacious avarice which has always distinguished them. On the contrary, he is compassionate and generous, and Lithuania is greatly indebted to him, for it was by him and Prince Gallitzin that it was saved from total ruin.

---

1 Particularly towards the soldiers. Reviewing a regiment of cavalry, he said, "I enquire only about the men; as to the horses, they are bought by the colonel, and, therefore, I know better care is taken of them."

2 His behaviour to his officers, however, while at Berlin, shocked the Prussians, to whom the haughtiness of the Russian generals was unknown. At this place it was matter of astonishment to see Repnin gravely stalking along, decorated with the badges of all his Orders of Knighthood, while a kniaz, Volkusky his nephew, several aides-de-camp, and Thiemann the Martinist, his secretary, followed him at some paces distance. Every time he turned about to utter a word, his attendants halted and took off their hats. His political mission, however, did not succeed. This Prince, a field-marshal, formerly ambassador triumphant at Constantinople and omnipotent at Warsaw, neither frightened nor cajoled the young King of Prussia, whom Paul had ordered him to oblige to rejoin the coalition. Repnin, dismissed from Berlin, repaired to Vienna, where the success of his negotiation is visible. But one of his secretaries, said to be a Frenchman of the name of Aubert, stole off with part of the papers and secrets of his embassy. This enraged Paul, and he dismissed Repnin, on his return, for not having succeeded at Berlin, and for having employed a Frenchman in his service; however, as a mark of singular clemency, he is allowed to wear the uniform of armies which he has commanded with glory for forty years.

A stranger, who has heard the name of Suvarof, wishes, on his arrival in Russia, to see this hero. An old man is pointed out, of a weather-beaten and shrivelled figure, who traverses the apartments of the palace hopping on one foot, or is seen running and gambolling in the streets, followed by a troop of boys, to whom he throws apples to make them scramble and fight, crying himself, "I am Suvarof! I am Suvarof!" If the stranger should fail to discover in this old madman the conqueror of the Turks and the Poles, he will, at least, in his haggard and ferocious eyes, his foaming and horrid mouth, readily discern the butcher of the inhabitants of Prague. Suvarof would be considered as the most ridiculous buffoon, if he had not shewn himself the most barbarous warrior. He is a monster, with the body of an ape and the soul of a bull-dog. Attila, his countryman, and from whom he is perhaps descended, had neither his good fortune nor his ferocity. His gross and ridiculous manners have inspired his soldiers with the blindest confidence, which serves him instead of military talents, and has been the real cause of all his successes. He is accounted a brave and successful warrior, who, educated in camps, is unacquainted with the Court, and ignorant how to flatter and fawn on a favourite. After having distinguished himself as a

subaltern, he advanced step by step to the rank of commander-in-chief. He is endowed with a natural ferocity, which serves him for bravery, and spills blood, like a tiger, by instinct. He lives in the army like a simple Cossack; he arrives at Court like an ancient Scythian, and, during his stay, will accept no other lodging than the carriage which brought him. To relate the details of his life would be to record a series of extravagances; and, certainly, if he be not mad, the ability to counterfeit madness is among the first of his qualifications, but his folly is the folly of a barbarian, which has nothing agreeable in it.

He has not, however, been always successful. At the siege of Otchakof, the Turks having made a feigned sortie, he chose, contrary to the orders of Potemkin, to pursue them, hoping to enter the city with the fugitives. A battery of mortars was opened upon him, and his whole column destroyed. He entered upon the assault of Ismail without having reconnoitred the place,<sup>1</sup> and his exploits in Poland

---

1 He usually announced his success in two or three words, and frequently in a couple of bad burlesque Russian verses Cæsar wrote to the Senate, "*Veni, vidi, vici.*" Suvarof might with propriety be more concise by one-third than Cæsar, for he always conquered without seeing. He said himself: "Kamenskoi knows war, but war knows nothing of him; I do not know

are those of a brigand. He hastened his march thither to satisfy the vengeance of Catherine, and to massacre the remains of an army already defeated by Fresen, and deprived of the brave Kosciuszko, its principal strength. Suvarof, embracing the inhabitants of Warsaw, and granting them pardon on the bodies of twenty thousand citizens of every age and sex, resembles a satiated tiger that plays with its prey on the bones of his charnel-house.

The singularity of his manners is as striking as the eccentricity of his mind. He retires to rest at six in the evening, and rises at two in the morning, when he bathes himself in cold water, or causes pails of water to be thrown over his naked body. He dines at eight, and his dinner, like his breakfast, consists of the coarsest and commonest food of the soldiers, and brandy; a man trembles to be invited to such a repast. Often in the middle of the entertainment one of his aides-de-camp rises, and, approaching him, forbids him to eat any more. "By whose order

---

her, but she knows me; as to J. Soltikof, he neither knows her, nor is known by her." A few such traits, and a few happy quotations of ancient history, have given Suvarof reputation. His partisans reported that he frequently shut himself up to study the dead languages, and even Hebrew. French and German he speaks tolerably.

am I forbidden?" demands Suvarof.—"By order of Marshal Suvarof himself," answers the aide-de-camp.—Suvarof, rising, then says, "He must be obeyed." In the same manner he causes himself to be commanded in his own name to walk or to do any other necessary thing.

During his stay at Warsaw, a crowd of Austrian or Prussian officers pressed to see this original. . Before he made his appearance, he enquired of which of these officers there was the greatest number; if Austrians, he decorated himself with a portrait of Joseph II., entered his ante-chamber, leaped into the middle of the circle, and offered to each of them the picture to kiss, repeating, "Your Emperor knows me, and loves me also." If Prussians composed the majority, he wore the order of the Black Eagle, and made the same grimaces. At Court, he is sometimes seen to run from lady to lady, and kiss the portrait of Catherine which they wear at their breasts, crossing himself and bowing. Catherine told him one day to behave himself more decently.

He is a devotee and superstitious. He obliges his captains to pray aloud before their companies; and ill-treats those foreign officers, or Livonians, who are unacquainted with the Russian prayers.



Sometimes he visits the hospitals of the camp, calling himself a physician. Those whom he finds extremely ill he obliges to take rhubarb or salts, and on those who are but slightly indisposed he bestows blows. Often he drives all the sick from the hospital, saying, "It is not permitted to the soldiers of Suvarof to be sick." In his armies all those manœuvres are prohibited which relate to a retreat, as he shall never, he says, have occasion to adopt them. He exercises his soldiers himself, and makes them charge with the bayonet in three different ways. When he says, "March against the Poles," the soldier plunges his bayonet once; "March against the Prussians," the soldier strikes twice; "March against the execrable French," the soldier then makes two thrusts forward and a third in the ground, and there sinks and turns round his bayonet. His hatred against the French is extreme. His letter to Charette has been seen in various newspapers. He wrote to Catherine from Warsaw, and frequently in these words: "Mother, permit me to march against the French." When the death of Catherine took place, he had already advanced for that purpose into Gallicia at the head of forty thousand men.

. Frequently he rides through his camp, naked to

his shirt, on the bare back of a Cossack horse ; and at daybreak, instead of causing the drums to beat the *reveille*, he comes out of his tent and crows three times like a cock, which is the signal for the army to rise, sometimes to march, or even to go to battle.

In the multiplicity of extravagances which he commits, or of insipid things which he says, if any singular or striking trait falls from him, everyone repeats and admires it as a burst of genius. This man has nevertheless some virtues ; he has shewn occasionally an uncommon disinterestedness, and even generosity, as well in refusing the gifts of Catherine as in distributing them about him. He will slaughter the wretch who asks life, but he will give money to him who asks charity. Almost at the same moment he gnashes his teeth in rage like a madman, laughs and grins like an ape, or weeps piteously like an old woman.

Such is the too celebrated Suvarof. He quarrelled with his wife, and would not acknowledge a son whom he had by her, preferring his nephews, the Princes Gortschakof ; but the Empress having made this son an officer in the guards, he said, "As the Empress chooses I shall have a son, be it so ; but, for myself, I know nothing of the matter." He had also a daughter, .

maid-of-honour to Catherine, who was distinguished at Court for idiotism. Her father, after an absence of several years, appointed a meeting with her at the house of a third person. "Ah, father," cried she, "how big you have grown since I saw you!" In French, this would have passed for a happy play upon words, but in Russ it was a blunder that excited universal laughter.

After the capture of Warsaw, he repaired to St. Petersburg, to enjoy the fruits of his glory; and this Scythian, who had never before any other lodging than his carriage, accepted apartments in the Taurique palace, and wore a superb marshal's uniform, which was given him by Catherine. When he received this dress, he played a thousand antics, hugging it in his arms, kissing it, and making signs of the Cross; and when he lifted it, he said, "I am not astonished they do not give such a dress as this to little Nicholas Soltikof; it would be too heavy for him to wear."<sup>1</sup>

We have seen the manner in which Paul dismissed him on his accession, and the motives which instigated him. The murmurs of the army afterwards obliged the Emperor to recall him.

Valerian Zubof, brother to the favourite, com-

---

<sup>1</sup> Nicholas Soltikof was one of those most hurt by the promotion of Suvarof.

manded the army which acted in Persia. Mention has before been made of this young libertine, who is naturally of a frank, honest and courageous disposition, but has been corrupted by favour. He had lost a leg in Poland, and was on crutches when he went to conquer Asia.<sup>1</sup> One of his couriers arrived at the moment of the death of Catherine, with the account of a battle. Paul sent him ribands of the Order of St. Anne, to distribute among his officers, and to each of the colonels a private order to lead their regiments to the frontiers. The general remained behind in his camp, without knowing what he was to do. He afterwards followed his army, and, on his arrival at St. Petersburg, gave in his resignation. He resides at present in Courland, where he possesses almost the entire domains of the ancient dukes.

From generals of such character, and armies at a distance from Court, and ignorant of what was passing there, nothing could be apprehended. The only corps which Paul had really to fear was the guards. For a

---

1 At the news of his wound, Catherine sent him her own surgeon, the riband of the Order of St. Andrew, the rank of general-in-chief, and a hundred thousand roubles (£10,000) to defray the expense of his cure. He demanded five hundred thousand (£50,000) more, to pay his debts.

long time these four numerous regiments, commanded by the first nobility in the Empire, had viewed with alarm the approaching reign of the Grand Duke, and regarded his accession as the term of their existence. Paul did not even conceal his aversion for them; and the severest reproach which he could use to his officers, and even to his soldiers, at the reviews of Gatshina and Pavlofsky, was, "Thou art fit for nothing but to serve in the guards." These troops repaid him, in turn, the contempt he affected, and, by way of ridicule, bestowed on his soldiers the epithet of "Prussaki," or Prussians. It is beyond a doubt that, with these dangerous successors of the strelitzes, a slighter cause than the tears of an Elizabeth, or the caressing attentions of a Catherine, would have served to excite them to mutiny. Paul did not think himself in security till he had distributed, as we have seen, his own battalions in these formidable regiments, caressed the soldiers, and deprived the old officers of their commissions. But it was to little purpose that he lavished on them roubles and brandy; these acts of generosity gained only those who were near his person, while the army complained and murmured.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 Peter I. had abolished the strelitz (archers), but their spirit revived in the four regiments of guards, who supplied their place. The guards, consisting of picked men, whose officers were taken

Paul, as Grand Duke, hated and despised by his mother, humbled by the favourites, ridiculed by the courtiers, living in solitude and almost forgotten under a brilliant reign, and preserving the most regular and austere manners in the midst of a corrupt and debauched Court,<sup>1</sup> required few amiable qualities or virtues to make his situation pitied by men of understanding, and his reign wished for by the people. He ought to have been expected as a deliverer ; he was, however, generally feared as a scourge. His domestics, his officers, his courtiers, his favourites, and even his children, dreadful to relate, partook more or less of these horrid sentiments. The suspicion he entertained that he inspired these sentiments doubtless exasperated him, and, perhaps, rendered him incapable of correcting them ; but, with this character, the traits of justice and goodness which sometimes appear in him are more striking, and occasion a

---

from the wealthiest families\* formed an army of near ten thousand men around the throne. The influence of this body was sufficient to effect a revolution, and, indeed, alone accomplished all that has taken place since Peter I.

\* To be an officer in the guards, a man must prove that he possessed at least a hundred peasants or slaves.

1 This is a piece of justice that must not be denied him ; and if his attachment to the Nelidof has made him neglect his wife, it has not made him offend against decency or decorum in public, hitherto at least. The Nelidof, however, is dismissed.

deeper regret for those qualities which might have been expected in him.

Before his accession, his favour was dreaded ; beside its often exciting the resentment of the Empress and the favourite, it was considered as the same sign of disgrace as fine weather is proverbially regarded as the constant forerunner of rain. No man has ever shewn more eccentricity and fickleness in the selection of his friends. At first, he opened himself with unbounded confidence and entire familiarity to the person who appeared to enter into his views ; then, repenting this frankness, he regarded his friend as a dangerous character, perhaps the creature of his mother or of the favourite, who had flattered him only to betray him. Beside those on whom the slightest attentions of his wife, or the kindnesses of Benkendorf, caused the storms of his anger to fall, the Empire swarmed with his banished domestics, disgraced favourites, and cashiered officers. It invariably happened that he who had been nearest his person had most reason to complain, and he who had received most favours found himself in the end most unfortunate.

Having given some account of the ministers of Catherine, it will not be improper shortly to speak of the courtiers who were in favour with Paul on his accession, and who will certainly continue in favour for

some time. It may be said with truth, in their praise and in his, that the majority of those ministers are more disinterested and abler statesmen than those of the old Court.

The two Princes Kourakin, who alternately have been in favour and disgrace with Paul,<sup>1</sup> are the two men, next to the *valet de chambre* I have mentioned, who possess most influence, and, perhaps, they are persons most deserving of it. Before the death of Catherine, though powerful and rich, their employments were insignificant. One of them led a retired life, amusing himself with the

---

<sup>1</sup> Alexis Kourakin had frequently been in disgrace with Paul, on account of the attention and regard he always paid the Grand Duchess; but the ill-humour of Paul on this score must not be ascribed to jealousy, which his character and that of his wife did not allow. Paul's ill-humour arose from political suspicions, not from love. One day, observing his wife speak low, by the fireside, to Prince Kourakin, he fell into a passion, and said to her, "Madam, you want to make yourself friends, and prepare to act the part of Catherine, but be assured you shall not find in me a Peter III." These inconsiderate expressions, which escaped from him in his rage, alarmed everyone, and Kourakin withdrew from Court. From that period the Grand Duchess was more unhappy, and under still greater restraint. The least message could not be sent to her without permission of her husband. He named those who were to offer her their arm for a walk, to make her evening party, or even to converse with her in the course of the evening. At length he found it more commodious to give her a sort of *cicisbeo*, who was never to quit her. Prince Neswitsky was the man whom he deemed insignificant enough for this office.



cultivation of the arts and sciences, or the education of his children, and was generally respected and esteemed. His manners and habits of life were very different from those of the greater part of the Russian nobility, who dissipate their time and fortunes in vices of every kind—in gaming, in luxury, and other follies. In a word, he appeared worthy to be at the head of affairs, and he now holds that station with his brother; the one being vice-chancellor of the Empire, and the other attorney-general. To them must be attributed whatever is right in the conduct of affairs.

Two young chamberlains, who, fortunately, were in the service of Paul when the couriers arrived with the intelligence of the death of Catherine, were suddenly metamorphosed into generals of the army, and became his first aides-de-camp. One is M. Rastapshin, who owes his favour to a very ingenious letter, and who, to preserve it, must renounce three-fourths of his understanding, and one-half of himself.<sup>1</sup> The other is a young Count Schuvalof, whom Paul had recently taken into favour, after having long neglected him; and to whom he presented one of his own dresses, to serve as a model for the horse-guards, of which he appointed him major. The young man appeared at

---

<sup>1</sup> He has already been twice dismissed, and recalled.

Court in this habit, as if in a sack; and doubtless found himself much at his ease in it. Nothing can be more singular than the equal favour of these young persons, since it would appear that the favour of the one was sufficient to cause the disgrace of the other. M. Rastaptschin, some years ago, was gentleman-in-waiting to the Grand Duke, at Pavlofsky. His young associates, and, among others, Count Schuvalof and Prince Baratinsky, considering their employments as a difficult and hazardous service—because a word spoken to the Grand Duchess, or a coat too fashionably cut, was sufficient to ruin them—absented themselves as often as possible, feigning sickness, or alleging some other excuse. Rastaptschin, tired in his turn with not being relieved, wrote a sharp letter to the marshal of the Court, in which he rallied his associates on the true motives which detained them at Pavlofsky; adding, at the conclusion, “For my own part, who have no disease to cure, nor a fair Italian singer to maintain, I will cheerfully continue to perform their duty to the Grand Duke.” These strokes of satire were aimed at Schuvalof as well as at Baratinsky, whom Paul, though his relation, could not bear. The marshal showed this letter to the Empress, who at first laughed at it; but Schuvalof and Baratinsky,

thinking they had reason to be offended, required an explanation from Rastaptschin. The affair made a noise: Baratinsky was sent to the army, and Rastaptschin was banished from the Court for a year. From that time the Grand Duke regarded him as his champion, and obstinately refused to accept the attendance of the other gentlemen-in-waiting, unless he was recalled: and accordingly, for more than a year, though they regularly came to Pavlofsky or Gatshina to offer their services, they were as regularly dismissed.

Among the favourites of the Emperor, M. Pleschtschief is a real phenomenon; he is the only one who has always kept himself at the same distance. It is true, he has never ranked in the first class of favourites; but it is also true, that he has always been exempt from storms. He is a man well-informed and respectable. He speaks several languages, possesses some knowledge of geography and government, and cultivates literature. He might even be of service to Russia, if among his good qualities he could reckon that of courage to speak the truth; but, unfortunately, his constant enjoyment of favour seems almost a moral proof of the contrary.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> He also has at last been disgraced, and with circumstances of great cruelty.

M. Nielebinsky, who had been the companion of the studies and amusements of Paul, was distinguished at St. Petersburg for great extent of capacity, and had acquired reputation by some love sonnets, not deficient in grace and sentiment. The Emperor has appointed him his private secretary, but on condition, no doubt, that he strangles his muse, which has served him, however, too well to deserve so cruel a death. It is at least to be wished that Nielebinsky may exhibit and practice the sensibility which he displays in his verses. His office is to give an account of the letters and petitions that are addressed to the Emperor; the fate of numerous oppressed individuals is accordingly in his hands.

M. Nicolai came into Russia as governor to the young Counts Razumofsky, who afterwards were his protectors. On the recommendation of Mrs. Pretorius, his relation, waiting-maid to the Duchess of Würtemberg, he was placed near the Grand Duchess in quality of secretary; he was created a Baron in Germany, during the travels of the Grand Duke, and became, on his accession, counsellor of state, director of the Emperor's cabinet,<sup>1</sup> Knight of the Order of St. Anne,

---

<sup>1</sup> What is called the *cabinet* in Russia is not a council of state; it is the room which contains the treasures, jewels, and private curiosities of the Sovereign.

and received some hundreds of peasants.<sup>1</sup> He comes from Strasburg, and is known in Germany by some imitations of Ariosto and other poems, agreeable enough, though extremely verbose. He also has been obliged to sacrifice his muse on the altar of fortune ; to which, ungrateful as he is, she had herself conducted him. I do not know if the political haughtiness, which he thinks himself obliged to maintain, renders him more happy, but it does not at least give him the appearance of it.

M. Danorof, late librarian to the Prince of Würtemberg, and since aide-de-camp to Paul, has also become an important personage ; but I abstain from speaking in detail of those with whom I am not sufficiently acquainted to form an adequate judgment of their merits. I will only remark that, in the list of

1 He had before an estate in Finland, a province ceded by Sweden, where the peasants are not completely reduced to the same mode of slavery as the Russians ; and Nicolai frequently complained of it, saying, "These wretches scarcely bring me in anything, and pretend to have rights." Those whom he has just received are in Poland, where he may do with them as he pleases, separate them, sell them, or make them work, like domestic animals, to embellish his gardens. From this anecdote, the reader may judge what this Strasburger is become in Russia, who passes in Germany for a philosopher, and whom so many scribblers flatter as a Macænas. If he read this, no doubt he will admire the moderation with which he is mentioned.

preferments which the Emperor has since made, I observe a number of persons deserving no other portion than the contempt and vengeance of the public.

Meanwhile it is apparent that the persons who approach Paul are morally better than those who had access to his mother.<sup>1</sup> He is surrounded by men of

---

1 The following piece of pleasantry will show the opinion entertained of most of the persons in place and in favour at the Court of Catherine. It occurred in a company where Twelfth-day was kept in the French manner, and where the king of the night was desired to dispose of the courtiers according to their talents and capacity:—

"Zubof has never rendered any service to the State, and is no longer of service to the Empress, since the Sapphies, Branicki, and Protasof execute the functions of his office. Let a few emetics be given to him, to make him bring up what he has swallowed; and then let him be sent to the baths of Baldona for the recovery of his health.

"Count N. Soltikof, president of the College of War, and governor of the Grand Dukes, is named president of the College of Physicians, and deacon of the Imperial Chapel. He may likewise retain the water-closet of the young Princes, provided he shut up his wife in a convent, or send her to Bridewell.

"Count Besborodko, chief counsellor of state, &c., shall be appointed cook to the Court; unless he had rather be director of the Lock Hospital for females, in which he will find all his friends.

"Vice-Chancellor Ostermann shall repair to Saint-Denis, to replace the sword of Charlemagne, long and flat as himself.

"Prince Baratinsky, marshal of the Court, shall be appointed Jack Ketch. A more gentle mode of putting to death than that by the knout is intended to be introduced; and he shall have the office of smothering and strangling in secret those that are wanted

information, and even of merit. I say he *is*, when perhaps I ought to say he *was*; for his fickleness displays itself on everything about him, and he does not

---

to be despatched, whether it be an Emperor or his son; it is expected, however, that he do not let them cry out, as he did about thirty years ago.

" Marshal Suvarof shall have a patent for dealing as a butcher in human flesh; and the army shall be allowed to feed on it in Poland, where nothing but carcasses are left.

" A committee of *outshiteli* (tutors) shall be appointed to examine whether Prince Yussupof be able to read; if he can, he shall be appointed prompter to the theatres, of which he is now manager.

" Markof shall be sent ambassador to Paris, where he has been already so successful. It is hoped that he will be the proper man to effect a reconciliation between Russia and the French Republic, since he has been the scourge of the Russian and Polish Jacobins, against whom it also has declared war.

" Samoilof, attorney-general, shall be made one of the chevalier guards, for he is a tolerably handsome man, which is a sufficient qualification for that post.

" Kontusof, director of the corps of cadets, in the room of the worthy Count of Anhalt, shall erect a monument to his predecessor, whom he studies to ridicule, and whom he makes us regret every day. His conduct, however, is the best panegyric on the memory of the worthy Anhalt.

" The corps of artillery shall remain with the old general Melissino, because he is the only general in that body who understands his trade; but on condition that he shall not have the management of the chest, and he do not expose his grey hair in the ante-chamber of the valets of the Court. He is requested likewise to employ less artifice in his conduct, and less smoke in his artifices.

permit merit to remain a sufficient time at his Court to be corrupted.<sup>1</sup>

The Prince whom Paul appears to have chosen for the prototype of his reign and his actions is Frederick William, father of the great King of

---

"Madame von Lieven, governess to the Princesses, shall retain her place, though she has somewhat the air of an Amazon; but the time will come when it will not be amiss to give young Princesses a little of a military air.\*

"Countess Schuvalof, grand mistress to the Grand Duchess Elizabeth, shall likewise be confirmed; but she shall be enjoined not to let beasts only have permission to speak at the table of that young Princess, unless they speak with sense, as they did in Æsop's days.

"Prince Repnin, having opened the door one day when Prince Potemkin called for a glass of water, that he might himself repeat this important order to the lackeys, shall receive a patent for the place of first *valet de chambre* to the favourites; a post which to him will be worth that of field-marshal. However, the crown of laurel which covered his grey hair shall be taken from him, because he suffered a buffoon to trample on him, without saying a word; and because the gift of a small house appeared suited to him, and to console him for the insult.

"M. Zavodofsky, director and plunderer of the bank, shall be sent into Siberia to catch sables, to replenish Her Majesty's stock of furs, which it will not long be in her power to keep up by any other means. She is already unable to furnish her family with them, and Zavodofsky is well-known to be a better huntsman than financier," &c.

\* This time is arrived.

1 This has taken place. The Princes Kourakin, and most of those whom I have named, are in disgrace at the moment of my writing this.



Prussia.<sup>1</sup> The same austerity of manners, and the same passion for soldiers, are found in the Russian autocrat. For the rest, I have drawn, I conceive, the character of Paul in relating his actions; if not, the task, I confess, is above my powers. It is well known that nothing is so difficult to paint as an infant, whose physiognomy is as yet unsettled, and it is the same with the character of an eccentric man. The most favourable plea that we can make for him is, that the light of the French Revolution has touched his brain and disordered his intellect; it had already disturbed the much stronger head of his mother. It is said that the people of Paris, crowding to see Paul (then a youth), cried, "My God, how ugly he is!" and that he had the good sense to laugh at it.<sup>2</sup> He is not improved since he is grown old, bald and wrinkled.

---

<sup>1</sup> This he does not allow; for he said one day, "I will be Frederick II. in the morning, and Louis XIV. at night."

<sup>2</sup> He is greatly changed; or rather, he now dares show himself what, perhaps, he was already. A poor soldier, in the agony of his sufferings under the cane, by Paul's orders, for a trifling fault in his exercise, cried out in despair, "Cursed baldhead! cursed baldhead!" The enraged autocrat gave orders that he should expire under the knout, and issued a proclamation, by which it was prohibited, under pain of the same punishment, for anyone to make use of the term "bald," in speaking of the head, or "snubbed," in speaking of the nose.

The Empress appears by his side like one of those beautiful women who are painted with a little deformed blackamoor near them, as a contrast to their dignity and grace. The singularity which he affects in his dress, and the severity of his manners, add greatly to his deformity. Without excepting even the Kalmuks and the Kirghises, Paul is the ugliest man in his extensive dominions, and he himself considers his countenance as so shocking that he dares not impress it upon his coin.<sup>1</sup>

I shall here subjoin some traits which will serve to describe Paul by his own actions, and will prove that, when Grand Duke, he announced what we have seen of him since his accession.

Near his castle of Pavlofsky he had a terrace, from which he could see all the sentinels, whom he delighted to station about him wherever there was

---

<sup>1</sup> The new coins have not his effigy, but his cypher merely, with the following words of Scripture, which, in such a connection, have no meaning: "Not unto us, not unto us, but to thy name." Probably it is some device of Martinism, or of *obscurantism*, which Paul patronizes. It even appears that he is going to establish this Order with that of Malta, of which, to the astonishment of all Europe, he has just declared himself Grand Master, at the very instant of forming an alliance with the Turks. Oh, my friends, can you refrain from laughter? But, alas!—

"Quidquid delirant reges plectuntur Achivi."

room for a sentry-box. On this covered terrace he spent a part of each day, and observed with a spying-glass all that was passing about him. Often he sent a servant to a sentinel to order him to button or unbutton a little more of his coat, to keep his musket higher or lower, to walk at a greater or less distance from his sentry-box. Sometimes he would go himself nearly half-a-mile to give these important orders, and would cane the soldier or put a rouble into his pocket, according as he was angry or pleased with him.

Pavlofsky was an open village, yet guards were appointed, who wrote down the names of all who entered it or went out of it, and who were obliged to tell whence they came, whither they were going, or what they wanted. Every evening each house was visited, to learn if there were any strangers there. Every man who wore a round hat, or had a dog with him, was arrested. The village, which had been much frequented because of its beautiful situation, soon became a desert; persons turned out of their way to avoid it, and when Paul was perceived at a distance, he was carefully shunned. These circumstances increased his displeasure and suspicions, and he often caused the persons who thus sought to avoid him to be pursued and questioned.

One day he put all the officers of his battalion under arrest because they saluted him awkwardly in filing off after their drill, and he ordered them to be called out for eight days successively to file off and salute before him, sending them regularly back to the guard-house till they were able to perform according to his fancy.

Exercising one day his regiment of cuirassiers, the horse of an officer threw him. Paul ran furiously towards him, crying, "Get up, rascal!" — "Your Highness, I cannot; I have broken my leg." Paul spat upon him, and retired swearing.

Passing, at another time, unexpectedly and secretly by one of his guard-houses, the officer, not knowing him, did not order out his men; upon which he instantly turned back, boxed the ears of the officer, and ordered him to be disarmed and put under arrest.

One day, travelling from Tzarsko-selo to Gatshina, of which the road was in the middle of a marshy forest, he suddenly recollected something, and ordered the coachman to return. "Presently, Your Highness," said the coachman; "the road is here too narrow." — "How, rascal!" cried Paul; "won't you turn immediately?" The coachman, instead of answering,

hastened to a spot where it was possible to comply. Paul, however, called to his equerry, and ordered him to arrest and punish the rebellious coachman. The equerry assured him that he would turn in a moment. Paul flew into a passion with the equerry also: "You are a pitiful scoundrel like himself," said he. "Let him overturn the carriage; let him break my neck; but let him obey me, and turn the instant I command him." During the dispute the coachman succeeded in turning, but Paul had him chastised on the spot.

Since his accession, one of his horses stumbled with him in one of the streets of St. Petersburg; he alighted immediately, held a sort of council with his attendants, and the horse was condemned to receive fifty lashes with a whip. Paul caused them to be given on the spot, before the populace, and counted the strokes himself, saying, "There, sir, that is for having stumbled with the Emperor."

One day, when only Grand Duke, he met in the gardens a man with a round hat, who wished to avoid him. Paul caused the man to be brought before him, and found that he was a clockmaker, who came to repair his timekeepers. After having at great length remonstrated with him on the indecency of round hats, he asked his wife for some pins, and raising the flaps

of the hat, cocked it himself, and then replaced it upon the head of its owner.

To balance this multitude of absurdities, he exhibits many traits of humanity; the pensions which he has bestowed on the unfortunate, the hospitals which he has founded for his soldiers, the provisions which he distributes among his poor officers, and other acts of benevolence and justice, attest that he deserves the character rather of a capricious than a bad man.

## CHAPTER VI

WHAT REVOLUTIONS MAY BE EXPECTED TO TAKE PLACE  
IN RUSSIA

*Attitude and strength of the sovereign power in that country—Two ukases of Paul favourable to a revolution—Debasement of the people—Other local obstacles—The sovereign power becomes more absolute—The nobility offended—These alone can change the Government—How and why—Probability of a dismemberment of that vast territory, and of a change in the manners of the people and form of Government.*

IF, as some pretend, the French Revolution be destined to spread over the globe, Russia will assuredly be the last place it will reach: it is on the frontiers of this vast Empire that the French Hercules will erect his two pillars, and that French liberty will long read, "Ne plus ultra": it is there that a new world is still hidden from her: there absolute power seems to defy opposition—a contest may, however, ere long, take place in the plains of Germany, which may decide the fate of

the world. The principles which at present prevail in the East and North are decidedly contrary to those which have of late distinguished the South and the West. Already the Continent seems to be wholly divided between two preponderating empires, France and Russia, the views and interests of which are diametrically opposite: they seek an opportunity of jostling each other, and will crush in the shock the secondary powers by which they are still separated. It will be the combat of Day against Night, the last conflict of Philosophy and Reason against Barbarism and Ignorance.

Not that light and truth may not be found in Russia; but they who possess them, still more prudent than Fontenelle,<sup>1</sup> are so far from daring to open their hands to spread them abroad, that they strive only to stifle them; for they who have knowledge are the only persons interested in maintaining ignorance. Till there shall be found in Russia a numerous body of enlightened men, suffering by that state of servitude under which the people groan, a spontaneous revolution must not be expected in that country.

If anything at present could hasten the moment

---

<sup>1</sup> He says somewhere: "If I had my hand full of truths, I would take care not to open it."



of attack, it is an ukase which Paul has just published; and which, by abolishing the degrees of nobility conferred by the possession of military rank and civil offices, has created a true *third estate*, never before known in Russia; a few emancipated vassals that have become tradesmen, or foreign mechanics, did not deserve this name: there was scarcely any distinction of persons except slaves and nobles. All who held any rank, civil or military—that is to say, all who had a little money or education—acquired nobility or its privileges, and hastened to enjoy the affectation of its prejudices and spirit: but as soon as this enlightened part of the nation shall lose its claim to a participation in these honours and advantages, it will turn to the side of the people. The void heretofore caused by absolute power between the slave or peasant, and the freeman or noble, is now filled up. The third estate will rise up as a giant; with one powerful hand it will exalt the slave, with the other it will lower the noble; and, perhaps, before a century shall pass away, it may have reduced them to a level more happy for both than their present state.

Another proceeding of the Emperor, which, in contradiction to its original intent, is likely to forward a change, is the ordinance proscribing printing-houses

in his dominions. He has permitted only three, for the purpose of printing his ukases and books for the Church, or such as can stand the triple ordeal of Government, the Schools and the Greek Church.<sup>1</sup> In thus attempting to suppress learning and knowledge, he has rendered them the greatest service of which he was capable. The moment liberty and philosophy possess one free press, the greatest benefit that can be done them is to destroy all others. All the books that have produced the revolution which the present age has witnessed, are to be found in Russia in great numbers: such as may still be introduced into that country from foreign parts, even from Vienna itself, will be better than any that could be printed there with permission.<sup>2</sup> I maintain, therefore, that Paul has done great service to liberty and letters.

---

1 He has since carried the proscription of books to great perfection; he has even prohibited the importation of foreign catalogues, and ordered the booksellers to put on such books as can go through the triple examination, by *imperial permission*, instead of *imperial liberty*, which were the words used before.

2 If the reader wish for a specimen of the scrupulosity of the Russian censor, I will give him one or two prior to Paul's tripling the office. In the reign of Catherine, one Legendre was the censor for French books printed at St. Petersburg. From a poem, in which the god of love was introduced, he struck out the words "*ce dieu malin*," observing that it was indecent to give the epithet of *malicious* to a deity. He allowed the author, however,

Russia, however, is still very far from enjoying this benefit in all its extent. The Russian, degraded by ages of slavery, resembles those degenerate animals to whom the domestic state is become second nature. It must be gradually, and by long and difficult paths, that he returns to liberty; he is yet a stranger to the meaning of the word; to him, to be free signifies to be able to quit the glebe to which he is chained, and lead an idle, vagabond life. Work he detests, because he has never worked for himself; he has not even an idea of property; his fields, his goods, his wife, his children, himself, belong to a master, who can dispose of them, and who does dispose of them, at pleasure. He is interested in nothing, because he does not possess anything; his attachment to his village is that of an ox to the crib to which it is accustomed. He is without country, without laws, without religion.

---

to substitute the word *badin*, "waggish," for it. Another time he struck out of an ode in praise of Catherine a verse, in which were the following lines:

Partout la foudre gronde et le glaive s'aiguise ;  
Un roi tombe du trône, et son sceptre se brise.

Each sword is sharpen'd, heav'n with thunder shakes,  
A Monarch falls, his pow'rless sceptre breaks.

This was an allusion to the preparations for war in 1790, and the commencement of the Revolution. At that time it was a political heresy to dare surmise that Louis XVI. would fall from the throne.

Christianity, as taught and practised among the Russians, no more deserves the name of religion, than the sound which the carman uses to direct his horses deserves the name of language, as will be evinced in a subsequent chapter.

The despair of some of these wretched peasants may occasionally, as heretofore, produce local rebellion against their lords ; but to expect a general revolution in Russia would be chimerical. Russia is too extensive, and too thinly inhabited, for the people to rise in a mass ; for a body so scattered and spread abroad would soon be subdued. Paltry towns, containing a few thousands of inhabitants, are commonly at a distance of more than a hundred miles from each other, without any seeming connection but hamlets dispersed in the woods every twelve or fifteen miles, and almost every one of which has its particular ruler. How can a people so scattered ever combine ? A single regiment, under the command of a Suvarof, would be sufficient to exterminate the population of a whole government.

The natural obstacles which *Muscovitism* will long oppose to all innovations, even the most salutary, are every day reinforced by auxiliaries arriving in Russia from foreign countries. Russia is now the common

asylum of ignorance, barbarism, superstition, and prejudice. Nowhere do men, imbued with such principles, meet so friendly a reception as in that country. There they find the infancy of their own country, the golden age of the feudal system. On their arrival, they are astonished to find themselves already too enlightened, too far advanced, for this happy land; afraid of appearing dangerous, they with joy replunge into the thick night of barbarism in which they were born. Thus the sluggard closes his eyes, and sinks again into that slumber from which the sunbeams had roused him in spite of himself. The man who carries into those climes something of knowledge and sentiment, finds it gradually obscured and extinguished in his heart; and if he happen to obtain a grant of a few hundred souls as the price of his own, he thinks it very just and very fortunate that there should be slaves, and that he is one himself.<sup>1</sup> This mode of purchasing those whose

---

1 Nothing is so fatal to humanity as men who have knowledge without principles, or who abjure those of which their conscience reminds them. They resemble those worm-eaten fruits, which are tempting to the eye, but prove nauseous to the taste. These men are particularly dangerous when they have art enough to conceal errors, shocking in themselves, under specious sophisms.

knowledge may be useful, while their probity may be dangerous, is so infallible, and has so much the appearance of generosity, that it is to be wondered it is not oftener had recourse to. The gift of a few score peasants might change even the soul of a Frenchman to that of a Russian.

Yet even in the Court of Russia, and among the nobility, there are some lofty and generous spirits, who, without being the dupes of a system of perfect equality, are indignant at the degrading self-denial required of them; for absolute power suits none but barbarians, and this the Russian gentry are no longer. Despotism, far from softening, and assuming a less disgusting mien in proportion as men's manners grow civilized, becomes more and more stiff, and renders its yoke more ridiculous and more odious; it endeavours to return to barbarism, as the people advance towards civilization. In other European countries power has descended a few steps from its throne, in deference to reason and public opinion<sup>1</sup>;

---

<sup>1</sup> The conduct of the young King of Prussia exhibits a striking contrast to that of Paul. One endeavours to exalt himself up to heaven; the other, to descend to the level of his people, and appear only the first servant of the State. In the same paper I read a Russian proclamation, which condemns a dozen unfortunate Poles to have their noses and ears cut off,

but in Russia it mounts still higher, and tramples even on common sense. Till the eighteenth century, it is true, the progress of the human mind in Russia was so far from parallel to what it was in the rest of Europe, that the date of the complete enslavement of the Russians is that of the establishment of commons and emancipation of vassals everywhere else. It is somewhat remarkable that the Tzar who drove the Tartars out of Russia was the same that imposed on the Russians the servitude of the feudal system, before unknown in that country.<sup>1</sup>

This stubborn conduct must in the end prove fatal to that pride and folly which it is meant to protect; the present race of mankind requires management. Power, exhibiting itself in the form of a graceful woman crowned with glory, with ease received homage, in which nothing was felt humiliating; the character of the warrior had something in it of chivalry, and that

---

and to be sent to Siberia, for having been *wanting in the respect and fidelity* sworn to His Russian Majesty (it is not said in what); and a letter from the King of Prussia to a little town, in which an insurrection had taken place, and in which Frederick William speaks like a father to his children—like a good King, who is proud to be a man.

1 This was the Tzar Ivan Basilovitch I. The Russian history notwithstanding styles him the deliverer; and Prince Sch—— has written a tolerable epic poem in honour of him.

of the courtier of gallantry, which seemed to ennoble it; but to require personal adoration, without any of the qualities that might justify it, must be revolting to every reflecting mind.

Reason can never become extinct in minds which it has once inhabited; like the lion in the desert, it retires slowly at the sight of a numerous and cowardly troop; but if these have the audacity to pursue and harass him even in his lair, he bursts through their weapons, and conquers or dies. Governors should dread and avoid such actions as may drive reason, honour, and good sense to extremities; the exaction of unnecessary homage may accelerate some unexpected catastrophe.<sup>1</sup> There is no likelihood of a revolution, after the French model, taking place in Russia as yet; but there may be one, for which it is already ripe—that of a more enlightened aristocracy.

It must be confessed that the friend of liberty and of Russia cannot wish for a change of any other sort at present; it is the only one of which this vast Empire is yet susceptible. The people, in the deplorable state in which we see them, are incompatible to the enjoy-

---

<sup>1</sup> The French emigrants are of opinion that the Revolution in France would never have taken place, had not the Queen been too negligent of etiquette, and the King too popular!



ment of liberty; they must be prepared for it, they must be brought to desire it, before it is offered to them; for now they would abuse or reject it. It may be said with truth that the Russian Government is less inclined to tyranny than the people are prone to slavery, so low are they debased, so much is their nature changed. With them, therefore, nothing can be done at present.<sup>1</sup>

Though the nobles still continue the habit of bending before the Sovereign, while they exact still greater submission in their turn from their slaves, yet are they becoming daily more and more enlightened. They have been corrupted rather than civilized; but they retain some virtues, which the last thousand years have been unable to annihilate; worthy in future of a government less barbarous, they will require laws written in legible characters. They begin to feel the weight of their chains; some day they will burst them, and then lighten those of their vassals<sup>2</sup>; and perhaps that day

---

<sup>1</sup> When I speak here of the Russian people, I do not include the Tartarian hordes, or the Cossack tribes, who still retain some remembrances of a sort of liberty; but it is the liberty of barbarians, who employ it only to make slaves.

<sup>2</sup> Let not the term of "nobles" startle the reader; those of Russia do not form, like those of France and Germany, that feudal and chivalrous body which literally conceived itself sprung of different blood from other mortals, and which remained separate

is not very far distant. Many young minds are warmed with the examples of antiquity, and meditate in secret on modern events; many, after having forgotten themselves for a moment in the history of other nations, turn back their eyes with dissatisfaction to their own, and to themselves. How, in fact, can such a government exist at the end of the eighteenth century, in a country not surrounded with a triple wall of brass—in a country where several can read, and some can think? Will Russians in future suffer themselves to be treated like the people of Morocco? In our age, and in Europe, justice, glory, virtues, or benefits can alone sanction the possession of absolute power and induce us to pardon the possessor. Reason cannot be compelled to silence but by being dazzled with great actions. Despotism is an idol, the arm of which is iron, but the feet of clay; its body is of gigantic size, but it is hollow; its head is hidden in a thick cloud, which slaves take for heaven; there are none but fools, however, who continue to worship it; none but cowards who pretend to pay it adoration.

---

from them by its morals and prejudices, as much as by its privileges. The word noble, both in French and German, marks this difference, for it designates an innate quality of the mind. *Dworannoï*, in Russian, the term for a nobleman, implies only a *proprietor of land*, because land can be possessed by none but a freeman.

When I point <sup>Y</sup>des the nobility as the only body in Russia on which Liberty can first rely on her setting foot in this Empire, I do not mean the contemptible herd that attends the Court, as a flight of unclean ravens follows the camp to devour the carcasses. There are everywhere vile and upstart valets, still more so than those who were born courtiers. It is neither the throne, the altar, nor the person of the Sovereign that produces their attachment; it is the most sordid cowardice: the man in favour and power is always the god they adore. I have seen them creep from favourite to favourite, as a caterpillar crawls from leaf to leaf, leaving his excrement on the last he gnawed. There is not, perhaps, one of these wretches who now kneel to kiss the hand of Paul who would not have cut off that hand, a few months ago, at the command of a Potemkin. From such dastards nothing can be expected but Court intrigues or Court revolutions, already too frequent in Russia; which serve only to prolong barbarism or misery. But a few powerful families, in which knowledge has taken its seat, as a stranger beneath the roof of hospitality<sup>1</sup>; a few young

---

<sup>1</sup> Many of these families have not less than twenty thousand slaves, towns, cannons, immense wealth, and, above all, relations who are generals and commanders of regiments. This is more than enough; one battle would decide the business in their favour.

men of courage and talents, desirous of a name, will, perhaps, avail themselves of some happy circumstances to qualify, at least, the oppressive forms of government till something better can be done; to secure a Sovereign worthy of power upon the throne, and give to a senate or council of some sort the influence now confined to unworthy favourites; to prescribe, at least, some bounds to abuses, which at present have not any. What a Dolgoruky could perform half-a-century ago, others may effect more permanently now.<sup>1</sup> This project, however, it must be confessed, can be conceived only by the noblest ambition, totally divested of petty interests; it can be executed only by great courage, great reputation, and still greater perseverance. There is a great difference between the possession of talents to fill an important station with dignity, and having the little arts necessary to obtain or preserve it; hence they who are discontented and in disgrace are generally the choice of the nobility and of the inhabitants of Moscow. If these unite, and once agree on a plan, the reign of blockheads is over. Of

---

1 The families of Dolgoruky, Galitzin, Soltikof, &c., have often deserved well of Russia. They were the principal persons concerned in shaking off the unworthy tyranny of a Mentchikof and a Biron, and who would have established a less arbitrary government at the death of Peter II.

all dominations, that of folly and ignorance over reason and knowledge is the most absurd and most shameful to bear. In Russia, every path to glory is blocked against the ambitious youth who is conscious of the powers to reach it. Would he find glory in vanquishing savages, or conquering *steppes*,<sup>1</sup> under the orders of a favourite, a fool, or a barbarian? Would he see it in the ante-chamber of the Court? Would he place it in the pursuit of a servile routine, or in forwarding plots, the impolicy or absurdity of which he durst not blame, at some foreign Court or in some office at home? No; for him the only road to glory is in a new order of things, to which everything invites him.

But a nearer and more unfortunate catastrophe, which seems to threaten the Tzars, is a dismemberment of their extensive territory. For a century past, the Empire of Russia, like the paste under the rolling-pin of the cook, has grown thin in proportion as it has been extended. All the bulk of the centre has been squeezed towards the circumference, to form a border, which is deceptive with regard to its real strength; these thickened borders will separate from

---

<sup>1</sup> *Steppes* is the name given to the desert plains that surround Russia. It is the best a Russian general can do.

the centre, which will become unable to support them. If we cast our eyes on the map, we shall be surprised at the vast extent of that romantic Empire, reaching from the banks of the Vistula to the farthest end of Asia, nay, even to America, and from the borders of the Sea of Asia to Lapland. It comprises almost a fourth of the inhabited continents. This superficies reckons at most thirty millions of inhabitants, and these of twenty nations, differing in manners, language, and religion. And this immense territory is governed from the centre of St. Petersburg, might we not say from the midst of the Court of the Palace, from the middle of a battalion drawn up in a square, where five or six officers salute the Emperor with their spon-toons? To me the Russian Empire appears like that spider, which, with a very small body, has long legs that fall off at the least obstruction it meets in its gigantic march. Less than a Potemkin would suffice to occasion this dismemberment; but Russia will not gain much by it.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> From the turn affairs are taking, it is not hazarding too much to predict that the first crack in this huge piece of paste will take place on that side towards which it seems inclined still to extend itself—I mean towards Turkey; whether the Greeks, regenerate and emancipated, at length repel the barbarous Mussulmans and Russians, or the French make their way through the Hellespont.

The happiest hope which Russia can entertain is that she may one day see on the throne an Emperor sufficiently wise and great to give it laws, to which he himself will submit ; a Prince of such magnanimity as to be ashamed to reign ingloriously over a people destitute of rights, and who may be capable of forming, from the summit of his throne, a gentle and easy descent, to arrive at freedom without a fall. This is what a true friend of Russia and humanity ought to wish ; this alone can now immortalize an Emperor. Peter I. himself lamented that he was only the despot of a nation of slaves. At an interview he had with the King of Prussia, at Parienwerder, he openly congratulated him on the happiness of being the King of a nation which he could govern by laws, while he could rule his only with the knout ; and he promised to bestow on it a milder government as soon as it should be sufficiently civilized to be susceptible of it.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> This circumstance was related by Baron Poellnitz, ear-witness of this conversation with the King. Another, which does no less honour to this great character, and which shows how much he was above the little imperial vanities of his pretended descendants, is that, being surrounded by the Turkish army, and despairing of escape, he wrote to the senate, like a second Alexander : "Choose for my successor him who appears to you most worthy." The senate at that period was very different from that of the present day ; in it was a Dolgoruky, who, like Sully, had the courage sometimes to tear up the edicts of the Tzar.

This time is arrived; the Russians are well worthy to be permitted by their Sovereign to rise to the level of the least enslaved people in Europe. Reason and humanity would gain much, had they but a mild government, even were it still absolute, as that of Prussia. Under this new system the Russians might still figure a long time in history, and prepare themselves for that grand revolution of the human mind, of which some think them already susceptible. This can only be the last step of civilization, and the return to simple and primitive ideas, after having revolved the immense circle of human errors and follies. Liberty and equality cannot constitute the happiness of mankind, till the people shall be prejudiced only in favour of sound principles of government. It is to be feared that Russia is yet ages from prejudices of such a nature.

Take heart, then, *staroövertzi* Russians (Russians of the old stamp), who have trembled at the progress of the French Revolution; take heart all of you who still dread its success, and who tremble at a truth as the guilty at a flash of lightning; the time is not yet come. Before you arrive at that dreaded regeneration, you have still to pass through all the stages of civilization. A nation must be polished before it can



be informed; yours is yet in its infancy. Before it can dread democrats, demagogues and Jacobins,<sup>1</sup> it must have had royalists, aristocrats, monarchists; you have yet only slaves. Augment their chains, spill their blood, drink their sweat in security; tear the

---

<sup>1</sup> I know not what is now understood in France and Germany by this term Jacobin, which is become so dreaded and odious; but it may gratify my reader's curiosity to inform him what it implies in Russia, where it is as fatal to him to whom it is given, as that of Jew was formerly to an unfortunate Spaniard. The present political Inquisition has even more expeditious modes of proceeding than the religious ever had.

A man who can read and write, of whatever nation, is strongly suspected. If he be a Frenchman, he is undoubtedly a Jacobin.

Whoever reads the *Gazettes* is a dangerous man; whoever talks of them is a Jacobin.

He who seems to doubt that Suvarof, with fifty thousand Cossacks, will conquer France in one campaign—Jacobin.

He who dares to say that the French are good soldiers, that they have any great generals, and that the Austrians have been sometimes beaten—Jacobin.

He who ventures to entertain any doubt whether Poland belongs to Russia, or whether it was allowable for the Poles to defend themselves against the Russians—Jacobin.

Every Russian gentleman who dares to say that a man may still continue for some time a loyal subject, though he ceases to be a vile slave—Jacobin.

Every captain in the guards, and every Russian officer, who dares to murmur at his corporal's being made his commanding officer—Jacobin.

The man who imagines that the Russians should be treated like men, and no longer sold or bartered like cattle—Jacobin.

A young nobleman whose dancing-master has not taught

infant from its mother's breast, to compel her to suckle your puppies that have lost theirs.<sup>1</sup> The day of retribution will not yet dawn on Russia.

Do you fear a constitution? you have not yet laws. Do you dread a National Assembly? you have not yet a parliament, not even a divan; for your senate is far from meriting such a name. Are your laws, your religion, contained anywhere but in the Emperor's head? Are not your souls at his disposal? Is not your meanness his greatness, and your nullity the cypher that marks

---

him to make a bow sufficiently low, and who, when he kisses the Emperor's hand, does it not as tenderly as if it were that of his mistress—Jacobin.

He whose coachman, not knowing his Tzarian Majesty (who, to be sure, is easy enough to be known), does not stop his carriage, in order to alight and prostrate himself in the snow or in the mud—Jacobin.

In Catherine's days, he who wore a dark green coat and large boots was strongly suspected by the favourites. Now, the wearer of a light green coat and half-boots is odious to Paul.

Whoever is followed by a dog, wears a round hat, and has a waistcoat without sleeves and flaps, is arrested and treated as a Jacobin.

This enumeration of particulars, which I could have enlarged, may appear, perhaps, to be an exaggeration; but it is too true that any one of these charges might prove fatal to the man against whom it was brought, and that the ruin of several persons has been owing to causes equally ridiculous, and not more reasonable.

1 An atrocity of this nature actually took place in Livonia.

his value ? Take heart ; your clock has not yet struck the hour of liberty.

Before that hour, terrible to you, the sun will long continue to rise on the same crimes. You will still change Sovereigns before you change your government. You will still experience all the horrors of Court revolutions before you see popular ones.

In the end, however, this memorable epoch must arrive, in Russia as elsewhere. The progress of Liberty is, like that of Time, slow but sure ; and some day will reach the North. Much has been written on the influence which climate must have on man ; and a political philosopher<sup>1</sup> maintains that it has a great deal on their laws and Governments. With regard to secondary circumstances, I believe it ; but principles are everywhere the same. Climate cannot act on the morals of a people, but from the want of law and religion, which are their primary regulators, and which may be transplanted anywhere. I know well that a desert and uncultivated plain in Russia will spontaneously produce some plants different from those of a field left untilld in France ; but if one be ploughed up like the other, and the same seed sown in both, you will reap from them the same grain. Thus the influence of climates cannot perceptibly take

---

1 Montesquieu.

place, except under the zones, where the human race has physically degenerated; and besides, does not Russia include at present all the climates of Europe? What! Shall the Russian, the descendant of the free and valiant Slav, be condemned to perpetual slavery, while the Swede, still farther north, boasts his liberty? Shall Moscow, under the same latitude with London, be for ever a barbarian city, a stranger to arts and laws? Under what climate, then, did the great Novgorod flourish so early as the eighth century—that powerful, free and commercial city, at a time when the people, who now boast most proudly of their liberty, still crouched in ignorance beneath the feudal system?<sup>1</sup> The Slavs,<sup>2</sup> who founded that Republic, seem, like the Franks, to bear

---

<sup>1</sup> Alexander Nefsky, whom the Russian monks have canonized as a saint and a hero, completed the destruction of this illustrious city by a general massacre of all its inhabitants. Far from uniting himself to the Novgorodians, who courageously threw off the yoke of the Tartars, he took upon himself the office of executioner of his own subjects to please these robbers, and destroyed the cities that refused to pay tribute to foreigners.

<sup>2</sup> *Slava*, in the Russian language, signifies glory. The word *slavoï*, or *slavnoï*, which means *the glorious*, of which foreigners have made *slavs*, *slaves*, and *Sclavonians*, is strangely disfigured. Other etymologists maintain, however, that all the Slavian or Sclavonian nations being known in Europe as subjugated, the appellation of *slave* was given in the West to the unfortunate beings who had lost their liberty, like them, and that from these regions every species of servitude came into Europe.

their destiny and character imprinted on their immortal names. A thousand years have not been sufficient to efface the noble impression. All the Russians have not yet forgotten that their fathers were more happy than themselves.

## CHAPTER VII

## NATIONAL CHARACTER

*Of the Noble, the Courtier, the Peasant, the Artificer,  
and the Soldier of Russia.*

THE character of the Russian, it has been said, is to have no character at all, but to possess a wonderful capacity for assuming that of other nations. If this be understood of the higher class of Russians, there is much truth in the observation ; but the same will equally apply to all people who are but half polished, and even to the inhabitants of all great cities, whose physiognomies are confounded together as well as their manners, because they derive their institutions and food from the same sources, because their blood is mixed and their way of life is the same.

The noble Russian—the only one to be seen in foreign countries or well-known in his own—has, in fact, a great aptitude for adopting the opinions, manners, customs and languages of other nations. He can be as

frivolous as a quondam French *petit maître*, as musically mad as an Italian, as reasonable as a German, as singular as an Englishman, as mean as a slave, and as haughty as a Republican. He will change his taste and character as easily as the fashion of his dress; surely, therefore, this suppleness of mind and senses is a distinguishing feature.

This great pliability will not appear astonishing if it be remembered that the Russians are a new people, on whom all nations have had more or less influence. From foreigners they have received art, sciences, vices, and but few virtues. The genius of the Government, and the particular character of the Emperor, are imprinted on all the nation, as on one single individual; and the Greek religion, an absurd sect of Christianity, has completed the alteration of its nature. It may be said of the Russian, that his government debases him, that his religion depraves him, and that his pretended civilization has corrupted him.

Thus the primitive character of this great nation can be traced only through all these vicious institutions. A thousand years under the dominion of *Varegues*, the *Tartars*, and its own Tzars, have not been able to efface it: what, then, must the people have been who, even now, display so many excellent qualities? The Russian

peasant—without property, without religion, without morals, without honour—is hospitable, humane, willing to serve, gay, faithful and brave; the farther you penetrate into the country remote from cities, the better you find him; the most savage is always the worthiest man, the farthest from the capital is the nearest to virtue; in a word, he has all those innate qualities which remind us of patriarchal manners, his vices are only adventitious. The remains of barbarism, still exhibited by the most enlightened part of the nation, presents a disgusting contrast. This barbarism is displayed in vulgarity of manners, an insulting contempt of mankind in general, disdain of inferiors and servile fear of superiors, indifference for everything tending to improvement, ignorance of the forms of society, insolent pride, baseness, immodesty, want of patriotism and public spirit, but, above all, the want of that honour which sometimes nearly answers the end of probity, and even of virtue. The half-enlightened Russian is the most abject of men; he crawls like the worm, which invites the foot of the oppressor to crush him.

This semi-barbarian is peculiarly fit for the trade of a courtier; for he is equally cruel, covetous, cowardly, and cunning. But, when speaking of a Russian, we



must not affix to the word courtier those ideas of urbanity, elegance of manners, and delicacy of mind, with which the courtier is embellished in other countries. In Russia, he who makes his way at Court, particularly with the great, is frequently the most impudent and infamous of men, who is ready to offer his back to the king of the frogs, not lying in a marsh, but swayed by an arm as vigorous as that of Peter I. No man who thinks rightly, no young man of a noble mind or cultivated understanding will please at Court ; and, if his birth or circumstances lead him thither, he will be in disgrace the moment he is found out.

In general, the Russians are fond of acquiring information, and have a respect for strangers. Such only as are totally destitute of education hate foreigners, or are jealous of them when they come into competition with them. One thing, less to their honour, likewise distinguishes the Russians—this is, a base and servile kind of politeness, which evaporates in foolish, flattering compliments. Their cringing gestures, and humble and submissive countenance before their superiors, remind you of their oriental slavery. They know not how to be polite without meanness, or to flatter without falsehood. But at this we cannot wonder, for to be truly polite a man must be truly a man of virtue, and not act,

from constraint or interest, what ought to proceed from right feeling and a due sense of decorum.

In Russia, the higher classes may be divided into two castes, absolutely differing in manners and opinions. They appear as beings of different centuries, and you would scarcely suppose them to be of the same nation, though they are frequently of the same family. The one are those who reprobate all reform, instruction and improvement; they would carry the nation back to a state of barbarism, and keep it apart from all the rest of Europe; they consider all civilization as perversion, and deem Peter I. the corrupter, not the legislator, of his Empire; they are made up of superstition, ignorance and prejudice. The political *raskolniks* detest foreigners more than the Turks or Chinese,<sup>1</sup> but they frequently possess native morals and virtues, and the excesses of

---

1 Nothing can equal the rudeness with which they sometimes apostrophize foreigners. "We have *bread*," they say, "and you are forced to come to us, otherwise you would be starved." Wretches, too barbarous to blush at the causes of that abundance of bread which they boast. Yes, a few thousands of their fellows eat wheaten bread, because thirty millions of slaves browse on herbs, and gnaw birch bark, on which they feed like the beavers, which surpass them in understanding. A few cities enjoy the pleasures of life, and exhibit palaces, because whole provinces lie desolate, or contain only wretched hovels, in which you would expect to find bears rather than men. In the caves of robbers, too, you may find abundance, and the traveller who had lost his way might experience hospitality.

the French Revolution render their system triumphant. The others, adopting the manners and customs of Europe, endeavour to keep pace with their contemporaries, and too often outdo them in corruption and absurdity. They glory in despising, or being ignorant of, the ancient customs of their own country; they have sense, are sociable, and possess knowledge and talents. Among these you will find amiable men and of great merit, but for the most part they have more politeness than honesty, more depravity than information, more vanity than pride. These are at present out of favour at Court; and the gleams of the French Revolution have terrified several, who return with docility to the skirts of barbarism.

Amid all these defects, the Russian nation has remained exempt from three fatal errors, which have tainted the rest of Europe with crimes and abuses. The Russians have never established among them the false point of honour of avenging the lie by a murder<sup>1</sup>;

---

<sup>1</sup> The Russians, as well as the Greeks and Romans, have shewn that a warrior may be brave without the madness of cutting his comrade's throat in a duel. The officer who returns with his cane a blow you have given him with your hand, mounts to the assault the next instant as a hero. At the same time, it is true that, in a society where the affront of a box on the ear may be wiped out by knocking a man down, and

their history mentions no war, no massacre occasioned by religious fanaticism<sup>1</sup>; and they have never considered birth as superior to merit.<sup>2</sup> Hitherto in Russia its nobles have not been esteemed in the inverse ratio of their factitious value, I mean their antiquity: but what is there called nobility has an origin truly valuable and noble, that of liberty; a noble signifying only a man who is free and possesses land, as already observed.

Next to drunkenness, the most prominent and common vice of the Russians is theft. I doubt whether any people upon earth be more inclined naturally to appropriate to themselves the property of others—from the first minister to the general officer,

---

where you may spit in the face of him who insults you with his tongue, that politeness and ceremonious respect which polished nations practise are not to be expected; accordingly, the Russian officers in general resemble a band of footmen in uniform. A Russian Prince affirming something to me "On the word of a man of honour," I said to him, "How can you pledge me the word of another?" This repartee might have been addressed with propriety to most of them: but those who have education are inferior to none in point of honour and politeness.

1 The persecution of the *rasholnikis* by the liturgist Nikon is scarcely an exception.

2 Paul is endeavouring to establish a Gothic nobility, to make out genealogical trees, and to introduce heraldry, the only science he allows to be cultivated.

from the lackey to the soldier, all are thieves, plunderers and cheats. In Russia theft does not inspire that degrading contempt which stigmatizes a man with infamy, even among the lowest of the populace. What the thief dreads most is the being obliged to return his booty, for he reckons a caning as nothing; and if detected in the act, he cries with a grin: "*Vinavat gospodin! vinavat*; I have done wrong, sir," and returns what he had stolen, as if that were a sufficient amends. This shameful vice, pervading all classes, scarcely incurs blame. It sometimes happens that your pocket is picked in apartments at Court, to which none but persons of quality and superior officers are admitted, as if you were in a fair.<sup>1</sup> A stranger, who lodges with a Russian, even a kniaz, will find, to his cost, that he must leave nothing on his dressing-table or his writing-desk; it is even a Russian maxim, that what is not locked up belongs to anyone who will take it. The same quality has been falsely ascribed to the Spartans; but an Englishman, who has published a book on

---

<sup>1</sup> The King of Sweden, after the battle of the 9th of July, 1790, invited a party of Russian officers, who had been made prisoners, to dine with him. One of them stole a plate. The offended King then ordered them all to be distributed among the small towns, where they never again ate off silver.

the resemblance between the Russians and Greeks, after having proved that they eat, sing and sleep like them, has forgotten to add that in stealing they are still more expert.

Whence is it that the Russians are more addicted to theft than other half-polished nations? Is it because stealing is less severely punished in Russia than elsewhere? No; it is owing to the immorality of the Greek sect,<sup>1</sup> the want of laws and police, and,

---

1 One proof that it is their religion particularly which leaves, or rather gives, them this quality, is that it is not common among the people of other religions who live under the Russian Government. The Mussulman Tartars are of tried fidelity; even the pagan Siberians are of exemplary good faith; and the Livonians, Esthonians and Finns, who are Lutherans, are neither knaves nor thieves. The worship of images, however, has introduced one happy prejudice among the Russians. He who would force open a strong box without scruple dares not break a seal. The following is a fact:— Having one day given a young soldier, my servant, two roubles for two letters, which I ordered him to carry to the post office, I went out. On my return I discovered that my trunk had been broken open and robbed of ten roubles in copper which were in it, and I learned that my soldier had been gaming with the couriers of the chancery, to whom he had lost a great deal of money. He was sought after by my orders, but in vain, and I announced him as a deserter. Three days after he appeared, fell at my feet, and begged forgiveness, confessing that he had stolen the ten roubles and concealed himself in the depth of a wood, but hunger and repentance had brought him back. Instead of delivering him up as a thief and deserter, I satisfied myself with ordering a non-commissioned officer to give him twenty blows with a cane. At this order he fell at my

more especially, the bad education of the nobles, who, from the cradle surrounded by slaves, imbibe from them the baseness of their own sentiments.

If you are more exposed to pilfering in Russia than in other countries, you are in less danger of being assassinated than even in England. I traversed the vacant spaces of St. Petersburg, and the deserts of Russia, with more security than the crowded streets of London or the well-frequented roads of France. Wherever I found a hut, I was sure of meeting hospitality at the threshold, and if I wore a white cockade in my hat, I was respected, and even feared, by the ill-disposed.

If stealing and drunkenness be the most prominent

---

feet again, and begged me with tears to punish him more severely, that nothing might lie on his conscience, he said, for having robbed his master; that he deserved a hundred blows, at least, and that he would have more if I sent him to the regiment. He persisted in his entreaties to obtain this singular favour. Surprised at such a request, and moved by his penitence, I was far from granting it; but I said to him, "Now you have confessed the whole, tell me what you did with the letters, as they were of importance."—"Sir, I carried them to the post office."—"What! would you make me believe that you did not begin with gaming away the two roubles I gave you before you broke open my trunk!"—"Ah, sir! God forbid that I should touch money belonging to anything sealed." In fact, after having lost rouble after rouble of the money he had stolen, he had carried the letters and the money for them to the post office, and I received the answers in due course.

vices of the Russians, hospitality and courage are their most striking qualifications.

From the extreme of wretchedness some good arises, as germs from the bosom of corruption. The countries where men are slaves or savages are thinly peopled, even if they be fertile ; hence, in such countries men are strangers to want, and, if allowed ever so little of their time and strength, can procure the necessities of life in abundance. Having few wants, and their property being insecure, they live from hand to mouth and freely bestow what they have. A vassal readily shares his bread, his salt and his hut with the traveller, and the noble is equally prompt to admit the stranger to partake of his table and his pleasures.<sup>1</sup> Every year the Russian or Livonian slave may set fire to a forest, and sow the virgin earth, which will return him ten or fifteen-fold. This slave employs for his own use only so much of his time and produce as is absolutely necessary to prevent his dying with hunger or sinking under fatigue ; all the rest is destined to augment the

1 In Russia parasites are not yet despised. The general, the rich merchant, every man in tolerably easy circumstances, keeps a sort of open house, so that his friends and acquaintances, officers in the army, and the crowd of young men and foreigners who have no house or home, daily find admission to his table.



superfluities of his lord.<sup>1</sup> Now, in Russia, where there are thirty million slaves, there are not a hundred thousand lords, who fatten on their sweat and blood, and these alone compose the *consumers* of an immense and fertile Empire. It is not surprising, therefore, to see the Russian lords display a luxury and profusion which impose upon the people, and which you would seek in vain where good and ill are more equally distributed. Many of these great lords, it must be avowed, possess laudable qualities. They are, in general, more inclined to enjoy what they have than to accumulate wealth; their riches are constantly renewing, like the race of men whence they flow, and frequently cost them nothing to acquire. The munificence of their Tzar, and peculation of every kind, are commonly their impure sources; but they know that they may lose them as easily as they were pro-

---

1 Many Russian and Livonian lords make their slaves work five days in the week; some even leave these poor creatures only the *Day of Rest* to cultivate the ground that must feed their family. But I leave the task of exhibiting at large the inconceivable evils which the Russians—and more especially the wretched Livonians—suffer, to one of my friends, who is treating this subject, and several others, more minutely. Reckel\* has lately roused the indignation of Germany itself by drawing a picture of their condition. Never did the feudal system, or the black code, present such atrocities.

\* Author of a German work, entitled "The Lettonians."

cured, and, therefore, they enjoy them while it is in their power. This some of them do so nobly that they gain credit for virtue, or, at least, for remorse.

The genius of the Russian people turns eagerly to commerce, for which it appears to be particularly calculated. When a peasant can obtain a passport from his master,<sup>1</sup> he hastens to quit his ungrateful fields and apply himself to some trade, in hope of accumulating money enough to purchase his liberty; but in this he is frequently deceived.<sup>2</sup> The Russian tradesmen, for the most part slaves, and fettered, besides, by the regulations of Government, can seldom rise to great speculations, in spite of all their industry; they confine themselves to inland traffic, and, instead of being

---

<sup>1</sup> For five-and-twenty roubles a year, a peasant sometimes obtains a passport, or license, from his master, under favour of which he can exercise his ingenuity in the cities; but this tribute is increased in proportion to his industry.

<sup>2</sup> The Russian slave, when he has contrived to make a little purse, cannot always offer it for his ransom, for his master sometimes appropriates his treasure to his own use. Many of these slaves become very rich, but their master refuses to sell them their liberty, considering their capital and their industry as his property, and as a last resource for himself. There are masters, who, after they have ruined themselves by gambling, have searched the houses of their slaves to seize on all they could find in them. This plundering is one of the reasons for which the peasants frequently bury their money, and die before they have been able to discover it to their children.

merchants in their own country, they are merely factors for the English, and find themselves obliged to be content, as the Jews in other countries, with the little profits of retail dealers and pedlars.

It is truly astonishing to see how strenuously Russian politics tend to ruin the subjects of that Empire. These cannot carry on trade to advantage, but in proportion to the rivalry between foreign nations that have need of the natural productions of their country; yet the Cabinet of St. Petersburg have shut all their ports to the competitors of England. The English are the sole purveyors of Russia, and the arbiters of the price of its produce, as well as of the value of its rouble, since they alone fix the rate of exchange. In short, they carry on this trade to the same advantage as is done with all barbarous nations, the Government of which sells exclusive privileges to some single company.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Whatever the people in Russia may say, the balance of trade is always against them; the natural productions of that immense Empire not being sufficient to pay for the foreign articles of luxury imported into the two capitals. One ship, laden with English hardware, is equal in value to thirty laden with iron, hemp or timber. The English carry away leather, and bring back shoes; grain, for which they return beer, &c. The only nation with which Russia could carry on an immediate exchange of produce is France, from

Mirabeau has said that the Russians are the most malleable of all people. A young peasant, rough, savage, timid, torn from his hamlet, is metamorphosed into an elegant and adroit footman, or a spruce and courageous soldier, in less than a month. His master makes him, in a short time, his tailor, his musician, or even his surgeon or counsellor-at-law.

I had been told, a hundred times, that the best way to teach them anything was by blows. I could not believe it ; but I saw it was so. When a few hundred recruits are delivered to an officer to form a new battalion, the cloth and leather necessary for equipping them are given him at the same time. Having drawn the poor

which it might receive oil and wine ; but these Russia chooses to purchase at third or fourth hand, and pay double the price for them.

The Russians, seeing their corn disappear, and nothing but paper left, notwithstanding the great quantity of gold and silver they draw from Siberia, suppose it is carried away by the strangers who come to their country to seek their fortunes, follow arts or trades, or serve in the army. This, however, is a great mistake. Soldiers, or men of letters, seldom grow rich, and in Russia less than anywhere ; the artist and the mechanic, too, more frequently meets poverty than wealth, and most of these strangers die or settle in the country. All who arrive bring, at least, a few ducats with them, and there is not one in twenty who goes away with any property. If a calculation were made, the balance with respect to these would be in favour of Russia. For a long time none but musicians, milliners, pawnbrokers and Englishmen have enriched themselves in Russia.

fellows up in rank, he says to one, "You shall be tailor to the company;" to another, "You shall be shoemaker;" to a third, "You shall be musician." If they grumble, they receive some strokes with the cane, and a few bad implements are given them, to go and practise at their respective employments. The caning is repeated occasionally, till they produce a boot or garment tolerably well made, and can play the march of the regiment. "But," said I, to a colonel, who boasted of having thus formed the Moscow grenadiers, "among those men there must have been several who had exercised, in their own villages, the trades you wanted; why, instead of choosing them yourself, did you not interrogate them on this head? He who could play on the *balaleika*<sup>1</sup> would have made a good fifer, and he would have been the best shoemaker who had learned of himself to make *lappis*.<sup>2</sup>"—"Oh," replied he, "you are a stranger; you know nothing of our Russians; among all those fellows there was not one who would have confessed what he could do." Strange and melancholy truth! but it is not so with the Russian alone. It is the same with the slave of every country, and always will be where a man

---

1 A sort of lute, with two strings, on which the Russian peasants play.

2 Shoes of linden bark, which the Russians wear.

is obliged to exert his corporal and mental faculties by compulsion.

This spirit of mechanical obedience imposed on the Russians has an unfortunate influence on all their imitative arts. They have a national music of their own invention, which is extraordinary, and bears the characteristic stamp of their enslaved genius. It appears formed to be executed by a machine, rather than by men. About half-a-hundred musicians, as they are called, have each a horn, differing in size in regular gradation, like the pipes of an organ; each of these horns gives but one tone, and each of the players has before him only one note, the greater or less length of which, and the longer or shorter intervals between its repetitions, form all the variation. Thus these musicians, each repeating his own note, perform by common accord the simplest and even the most complicated airs. The bulk of these horns, and the purity and depth of their tones, render their concert sublime, and its effect is particularly grand by night, and in the open fields. I doubt the possibility, however, of forming a band for this strange music anywhere but in Russia, as it would not be easy to muster fifty men who would consent to dedicate their lives to the sole purpose of sounding one note on a horn, and wait whole hours measuring rests,

in expectation of the moment for sounding this note, incapable of being moved by the air they are employed in playing, or by the art they profess. Nothing but an automaton, an organ-pipe, or a slave can be brought to this exactness. The Greeks and Romans had slaves likewise, but they had liberal arts; in Russia there are none. All the arts there are servile or foreign, and can be naturalized only with freedom.

Whether he exercise arts, guide the life-supporting plough, or handle the destructive musket, the Russian is fettered, and trembles under the lash of a master; all the qualities of his mind are withered, and the tenderest feelings of his heart are outraged.<sup>1</sup> How astonishing is it that, with these debased beings, torn by force from their families as a sheep from the fold, and of

---

<sup>1</sup> What has disgusted me is to see men, with grey hair and patriarchal beards, lying on their faces, with their breeches down, while they were flogged like children. Still more horrible!—I blush to write it—there are masters who sometimes force the son to inflict this punishment on his father; and, most abominable of all, there are sons who comply with such an insult. These and many other horrid actions are committed chiefly in the country, where the lords, in their castles, exercise the same authority over men as over animals. Even women are subjected to the most indelicate insults. These barbarities, however, become more rare, and inspire the better kind of Russians with as much horror as they do my readers; but they are still committed, and attest to what a pitch of degradation the human species may be reduced.

whom the greater part die of grief and terrors before they reach the army, to which they are driven by the cane, Russia should have gained so many victories over her neighbours! Reasons for such apparent contradiction, however, may be assigned. The Russian who can support the wretched life necessary to complete the education of a soldier, may be considered as an invulnerable, or, at least, insensible being, immersed in the waters of the Styx. Scarcely one in three endures the trial, but he who does remains indefatigable, and hard as the iron that has repeatedly passed under the hammer. From the proud Russian Prince, who would devour a raw turnip or cucumber, after having gormandized on the most exquisite dishes at a sumptuous table,<sup>1</sup> to the filthy Siberian, who feeds on stinking fish, all the Russians seem to have iron constitutions, capable of supporting equally the extremes of heat and cold, of gluttony and abstinence. The veteran soldiers are the hardest of men. Reeking from the vapour bath, they roll themselves naked in the snow and sleep on a bed of ice. From the severest toil they pass to the most indolent repose; after the

---

1 Potemkin has often been seen to present himself in the midst of his courtiers, with his legs bare and his hair about his ears, eating a raw carrot or turnip, when just come from the Empress's table.



longest and most rigid abstinence they gorge themselves with food with impunity; and with a *soukare* (biscuit) and an onion in their pocket, they will travel sixty versts a day, to follow Suvarof.

Lassant la faim, la soif, et la fatigue,  
Le soldat Russe affronte les revers,  
Brave la mort, et franchit les deserts.  
Fier et soumis, de soi-même prodigue,  
Guider son bras, il détruit l'univers.

The Russian—hunger, thirst, fatigue subdued,  
His foe across each desert wild pursues,  
Dares adverse fortune, dares impending fate,  
And prodigal of life is bravely great.  
Humble, yet proud, his banners wide unfurl'd,  
Guide but his arm, he'll subjugate the world.

In short, if, as it has long been imagined, to be a good soldier require nothing more than to be a very exact machine, the Russian must certainly be the best in the world. His valour is so mechanical and so docile<sup>1</sup> that he dreads the cane of his officer more

---

<sup>1</sup> The Russian soldier sometimes gives very laughable proofs of this mechanical exactness. Peter I. had issued orders that every man who went through the streets without a lantern after ten o'clock at night should be stopped. A physician, returning from a visit to a patient, was preceded by his servant with a lantern. The servant was suffered to pass, but the physician, notwithstanding all he could say, was conducted by the sentry to the guard-house.—In a battle with the Swedes a galley was sunk, on board of which were several officers of the guards. The commander of the next galley cried out to his men: "Save the

than the cannon of the enemy : it may be said of him that he is afraid to be a coward. Contrary to what is seen in many other nations, the Russian soldier is more intrepid than his officer. He has powerful incentives in his ferocious disposition—love of plunder and desperation. The officer wants these, and is often destitute of that sense of honour, courage and patriotism. Catherine substituted for these a bait of various recompenses, of which she was prodigal on all occasions. Every officer present at an engagement<sup>1</sup> was promoted a step : they who were mentioned with honour by the general in his report received crosses or gold-hilted swords ; and they who were wounded, peasants or pensions. I have seen officers who, in one campaign, had received two crosses, a gold-hilted sword and two

---

officers of the guards." One poor fellow, sinking, held up his arm for assistance, and a soldier caught hold of it ; but before he would pull him out, he asked : " Are you an officer of the guards ? " The poor fellow being unable to answer, the soldier let him go, and he perished.

1 The soldiers received a silver medal, and I have seen whole regiments where none but the recruits just arrived were without them. The medal distributed to those who were present at the expedition against Tschesme, or Clazomene, where the Turkish fleet was burned, has great sublimity in the inscription : "*Bouil--* I was there." Paul recompenses his soldiers by giving permission to a regiment, with whose services he is satisfied, to use the *Grenadier's March*.

promotions. There is a wide difference, however, between the valour of these soldiers and that of those warriors whose heroic exploits were rewarded by a branch of oak or the simple approbation of their country.

The Russian soldier has retained some virtues, of which he frequently exhibits proofs amid the excesses in which he too often indulges; for, notwithstanding the dread and horror which the peasant feels for the life of a soldier, young men have been seen to cast themselves at the feet of the recruiting officers, and beg that they might be taken instead of a brother about to be torn from his family.<sup>1</sup> The greatness of such a sacrifice can only be properly estimated when we recollect that a Russian soldier is enlisted, not for a certain number of years, but for his whole life.

I I was much interested for a young man, who had come five hundred miles to beg that he might be received into the regiment instead of his brother, who had a large family; and I spoke of it to the minister of war, relating the particulars of a sacrifice, which, in my opinion, deserved to be rewarded by setting the soldier at liberty, without detaining his generous brother. A relation of the minister, who was present, said: "We must dismiss all our soldiers, then; for I have seen such things as would astonish you a thousand times." This silenced me, not knowing which to admire most, the natural goodness of the Russian slaves or the hard-heartedness of their lords. This man had been taken by Pugatshef, tied up in a bag and was on the point of being thrown into the river, when a Russian party delivered him.

Once dragged from his hut and all that are dear to him, he must grow old under the severest discipline, if he do not fall by the sword of the enemy. If he be married, scarcely will he have quitted his wife before his master may give her another husband<sup>1</sup>; and if he have children, he will never behold them again.<sup>2</sup> He is lost, dead to his family for ever.

You then see him giving proofs of courage and confidence in his generals, which serve him instead of patriotism<sup>3</sup>; so the well-trained dog displays from

---

1 This is forbidden; but it is frequently done, that the master's income may not be diminished, for he would be obliged to support the wife and children; but by marrying her again, the same fields are cultivated by the husband's successor, who pays the same tribute. Frequently a lord marries a stout girl of twenty to a boy of ten or twelve, in order to establish a fresh household. Sometimes a father of a numerous young family, finding his task too severe, solicits a stout wife for one of his boys, and supplies the place of a husband to his daughter-in-law till the child is grown up. Such disorderly conduct is very common in the country.

2 The soldier never obtains a furlough.

3 At the siege of Otchakof, a piquet guard, going to an advanced post, met an officer in the trenches, who said to them: "The Turks have made a sally; the post to which you are going is already in their hands; turn back, or you will be cut to pieces."—"What is that to us?" answered one of the soldiers; "Prince Dolgoruky is answerable for us." Notwithstanding the officer's representations, they went on and returned no more.

At the attack which the Turks made upon Kimburg, Suvarof went out drunk at the head of his garrison to repulse the enemy.

obedience the same courage as the generous lion defending his life or liberty. In his bravery, native hilarity, gait and cleanliness, the Russian soldier is admirable. There are regiments which, for these sixty years, have been almost always in sight of the enemy. These continual combats have rendered the Russians warlike; but the scenes at Otchakof, Ismail and Prague, and the devastations in unhappy Poland, have stamped their valour with the most ferocious barbarity. Yet this was the character of the generals that commanded them, of Catherine, who excited them, rather than their own. Yet amid that horde of savages which she let loose upon that wretched nation, by the side of the Suvarofs, Denisofs, Kakofskies and Kretschetnikofs, whose names are even less barbarous than their characters, might be seen the Repnins, Gallitzins, Buchshefdens, Fersens, the young Tolstoï, and several superior officers, whose humanity, and even

---

The Russians gave way at the first charge, and several took to their heels. A soldier, enraged, stopped the fugitives with his bayonet, obliged them to turn back, and charged at their head, as if he had been their officer. Catherine, being informed of this action, which was the cause of the first victory in the last war, would have given him a commission; but this he refused, saying that he could neither read nor write, and would rather be a good soldier than a bad officer. The Empress then sent him a gold medal, and conferred on him a pension of three hundred roubles—(£30).

urbanity, formed a complete contrast to the barbarity of their companions. The Russians, who became so ferocious under the reign of Catherine, were much less so under that of the mild Elizabeth. Their memory is still respected in Prussia: the conduct and discipline which they observed there during two years were acknowledged with gratitude by the inhabitants. The irregular Cossacks, the Bashkirs, the Kirghises and the Kalmucs, who compose their light troops, are the only barbarians without discipline.

The genius of Catherine required a nation so new, so malleable, and of which she might say, as the statuary in La Fontaine says of his block of marble: "Shall I make of it a god or a table?" Of the Russian she could not make a god, but she might have made a man: her greatest crime is the not having placed her glory in doing this.<sup>1</sup> By submitting

---

<sup>1</sup> Catherine, the disciple and idol of our philosophers, the Legislatrix of the North, has riveted the chains of the unhappy Russians. By what fatality is it that she, who in her youth was not afraid to have the question discussed, whether it would not be proper to emancipate the peasants, should finish by reducing to similar slavery those provinces which had retained some franchises? Wiasemsky, whom Momonof punningly called *Volterre* (the land stealer), with a single stroke of the pen reduced the Cossacks, Tartars and Finns to the state of slaves, in order to augment the capitation; notwithstanding Catherine had acknowledged

to the reign of Catherine and her twelve favourites, Russia proved itself the most debased of nations.

Peter I. having employed a monk to translate Puffendorf's "Political History of Europe" into Russian, the monk, from a sentiment of mean and false delicacy, softened all the expressions he found relating to slavery and Russia; he even took the liberty to omit the chapter treating of the national character of the Muscovites altogether. Peter, turning over the book, presently discovered it, gave the monk a severe reprimand, and ordered him immediately to correct the whole of the translation, and render it perfectly faithful. This noble frankness demands our esteem; but what will the reader say when he is informed that, under the reign of Catherine, a new translation of Puffendorf appeared, with all those omissions which the monk had formerly made?

Russia—brave, powerful, amiable and hospitable nation! where I found friends and protectors—forgive the frankness of a stranger, who ventures to

and guaranteed their rights! This Wiasemsky, whose knavery was equal to the stupidity of his successor, was attorney-general and treasurer of the empire; and, according to the Russian expression, was *the Sovereign's eye*. Count Panin, speaking of him, said to Catherine: "You have a purblind eye there;" to which she answered: "For that reason I will have the senate obey it."

depict you as you appeared to him; and who, if he had been speaking of his own countrymen, could not always have spoken of them with praise. In painting your good qualities I have displayed your heart; in painting your vices I have shewn only the marks of your chains. May freedom efface them at some future day!



## CHAPTER VIII

## RELIGION

*The Greek Church—Priests—Festivals—Fasts—Images.*

IT has often been made matter of reproach to religion that her most zealous defenders are not always the best of men in their own characters—it is to be lamented that Russia in particular affords matter to support this sarcasm. There, a most illiterate or most degenerate sect, under the name of Christians, relies on abstract points of doctrine instead of morals, miracles instead of reason, the performance of ceremonies instead of the practice of virtue, and purchasing expiation for crimes instead of repentance or punishment. There the devotee is assuredly a knave, and the hypocrite a villain. I have already asserted that the principal cause of the vices of the people is the immorality of their religion; and he who considers that in the Russian Greek Church there are neither sermons, nor exhortations, nor catechism, will at once see the rectitude of my opinion.

A sort of auricular confession, but very different from that of the Catholics, is the only act which reminds the Russian of a few of his duties; but all the confessor enjoins him consists in fasting, repetition of litanies, and making the sign of the Cross. The archbishop or metropolitan, indeed, sometimes preaches a sermon in the chapel belonging to the palace; but this sermon used to be nothing more than an oration to flatter Catherine, who heard it with downcast eyes, and kissed her hand to the preacher by way of acknowledgment. It is true, likewise, that Plato, Archbishop of Moscow, who is really a man of merit, has composed some very sensible and eloquent homilies; and that he has enjoined the parish priests to make similar ones, or at least to read his, on Sundays and festivals. But these country popes are not always capable even of doing the latter; the rest are still less equal to the former; and they who are able are negligent.

Besides the fifty-two Sundays in the year, the Russians celebrate sixty-three festivals, twenty-five of which were dedicated to Catherine and her family.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Five of these festivals were exclusively in honour of Catherine: firstly, her birthday, the 21st of April, old style; secondly, her accession to the throne, the 28th of June; thirdly,

At Court these were days of *Te Deum*, or rather *Te Deam*, pomp, balls, distribution of favours and feasting; in the towns, of drunkenness and disorder. In the country they might have been days of rest for the wretched; but if their masters did not send them to their usual tasks after Mass, they dedicated those moments to the hasty gathering in of their own harvest; in this respect, however, the festivals were a benefit to them.

The most despicable and most despised of all persons in Russia are the priests. Many of them cannot even read; yet they are more despicable for their drunkenness and intemperance than for their gross ignorance. There are seminaries for their tuition, indeed, but it is not always necessary for a man to have been educated in them in order to become a priest. A father bequeaths to his son his living, his church, and his flock; for this he wants nothing but the consent of his lord, who easily obtains that of

---

her coronation, the 22nd of September; fourthly, her inoculation for the small-pox, the 21st of November; and fifthly, her name-day, the 24th of the same month. For these solemn days each of her generals were anxious to send her the news of some important victory, which she preferred to any other homage. It was necessary for the enemies of the Russians to be particularly on their guard some days preceding these festivals, for they were sure to be attacked.

the bishop. If the son be able, as his father was before him, to read a little in the Sclavonian language, say Mass, and chaunt vespers, he is master of his trade, and follows it. He often gets drunk and fights with his parishioners, who, notwithstanding, kiss his hand and ask his blessing, after they have given him a drubbing.<sup>1</sup> It is not uncommon, in the streets of Moscow and St. Petersburg, to meet drunken priests and monks, reeling along, swearing, singing, and insulting the passengers, male and female. One of the chief causes of the vices and ignorance of these Russian priests, however, is to be ascribed to the prohibition they are under to read any book except their breviary, to employ themselves in any occupation, to do any work, or to play on any instrument of music.

The indecency with which these priests officiate render the ceremonies extremely ridiculous, which would be much less so in themselves.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> On certain days in the year these popes make the tour of their parishes, demanding, from hut to hut, eggs, butter, flax, fowls, &c. On their return, you might see them either lying dead drunk on the bottom of the cart among their stores, or merrily singing as they drove it along.

<sup>2</sup> A Russian general, having a child of one of his domestics baptized in his ante-chamber, conducted thither the company who had dined with him, to amuse them with the sight. The priest having officiated with an ease and dignity which were not

Many lords have private chaplains in their own houses to say Mass ; but they commonly live with the footmen, and are not admitted to their master's table. The condition of these priests, however, is free.<sup>1</sup>

The superior clergy are more respectable and certainly much more respected. Nothing can be more pompous than a solemn Mass celebrated by an archbishop, who is arrayed in his robes by his clergy in the midst of the temple, as was the grand priest formerly when sacrificing in the temple of the gods.<sup>2</sup> Plato

---

expected, the general applauded his performance by clapping and crying, "Bravo! Bravo!" These Russian baptisms by immersion are always extremely indelicate when the person is a Turk or a Kalmuc of five-and-twenty. Their marriages, too, have many ridiculous ceremonies. I saw a lady, at the marriage of her waiting-woman, in her own private chapel, smartly scold her chaplain for not knowing these ceremonies, and take the direction and ordering of them upon herself. The bride on this occasion was an Englishwoman, and a clergyman of her own nation gave her away. His grave deportment formed a singular contrast to that of the officiating pope.

1 During the war with Sweden, as there was a pressing want of men, several thousands of priests' sons were, notwithstanding, taken away, and some battalions of artillery formed of them. Several of them had already commenced their sacerdotal functions; yet they were dragged, like slaves, from their altars and their wives, to go and learn the management of great guns in General Melissino's camp.

2 M. d'Artois, during his stay at St. Petersburg, happened to be at such a ceremony when Catherine sent an officer to him

and Gabriel, archbishops of Moscow and St. Petersburg, are men venerable for their character and conduct, and particularly for the pains they have taken to reform the manners of their brethren. M. Sambursky, chaplain to the Grand Dukes, is a man who does honour to his cloth and country. He is the only Russian priest to be seen without a beard. When he was in London, he obtained permission, though with difficulty, to shave himself; and he has had the courage to persevere in the practice since his return. But if he left his beard in England, he brought thence taste and knowledge, from which his country may reap advantage. He applies himself to the improvement of agriculture in the environs of Tzarsko-selo, where he has cleared deserts and drained marshes, to form

---

with the news that Dumouriez had been defeated at Nerwinden. The Russians imagined that it was his devotion to their St. Alexander which had procured him such a happy message, and the Prince was willing to pay the archbishop a compliment on the occasion, but he very unpolitely answered that he had prayed only for true believers. Perhaps the reader will be surprised to hear that Catherine, who so much ridiculed the consecrated sword which the Pope sent to the Austrian general, Daun, herself ordered a sword to receive the benediction of the metropolitan of St. Alexander Nefsky, to make a present of it to M. d'Artois. Its hilt was of gold, ornamented with brilliants, and on the guard were these words: "God and the King." It has not performed more miracles, however, than Marshal Daun's.

fertile fields or English gardens.<sup>1</sup> This is the only vengeance he takes on his more bigoted brethren, for their contempt of one whom they consider as a heretic. He has obtained another dispensation equally extraordinary. His wife being dead, he is permitted to continue in the exercise of his clerical functions as a widower, which is contrary to the rules of the Greek hierarchy. According to these, a man cannot act as a parish priest without being married; and, as a priest can marry but once, if he lose his wife he must shut himself up in a convent. For this reason the wives of the priests are the most tenderly treated and the happiest women in Russia.

Is it to ignorance, one of the characteristics of

---

<sup>1</sup> Those of the Grand Duke Alexander, of which he formed the plan, and was not unfrequently its executor, were founded on a very ingenious thought. Catherine had written a tale for her grandchildren, entitled, "The Tzarovitch Chlore." The little Chlore undertakes a journey to reach the top of a mountain, where blows a rose without a thorn, and gathers it, after a thousand dangers and a thousand toils. M. Sambursky has exhibited all the scenes and adventures of this tale in the field of nature. The centre of the garden is a mountain, on the summit of which stands the temple of the rose without thorns, and the path that leads to it presents all the instructive allegories which Catherine had invented for the young Princes. An adopted son of the worthy Sambursky has written a description of these gardens in verse, which the author of the present work has translated into French.

the Russian clergy, that we are to look for the causes of the happy exception their Church offers in the annals of Christianity? Their disputes and mistaken zeal have not, as elsewhere, occasioned wars, massacres and persecutions. If we except the violent acts of Peter I., to reform their beards and long garments, and those of Nikon, to establish his new liturgy, the Russian history exhibits none of those religious contests which have deluged the earth with blood. Archbishop Nikon was, no doubt, right in endeavouring to render the form of worship more pure and simple; but he was wrong in exhorting the Tzar Alexis to employ violence. They who would not make the sign of the Cross with three fingers had their hand cut off; hence arose a schism. These schismatics would not admit either the translation of the sacred books by Nikon, or his new litanies; and even now they would rather lose their hand than not make the sign of the Cross with two fingers, as a symbol that the Holy Ghost proceeds from the Father alone. These are called by others *raskolnikis*,<sup>1</sup> but they style themselves *staroi-vertsi* (old believers). They were prohibited from celebrating worship in public, but they held private

---

1 Schismatics.



once prostrates himself before the image, his servant having taken it from its case and placed it in his master's room.

I knew a Russian Princess who had always a large silver crucifix following her in a separate carriage, and which she usually placed in her bed-chamber. When anything fortunate had happened to her in the course of the day, and she was satisfied with her admirers, she had lighted candles placed about the crucifix, and said to it, in a familiar style: "See, now, as you have been very good to-day, you shall be treated well; you shall have candles all night; I will love you, I will pray to you." If, on the contrary, anything occurred to vex this lady, she had the candles put out, forbade her servants to pay any homage to the poor image, and loaded it with reproaches and revilings.

Even Catherine affected to have great devotion towards images. She was frequently seen to prostrate herself before the door of her chapel, take up the dust from the ground, and scatter it over the diamond crown on her head. Once an image of the Virgin, covered with diamonds, of which the Empress Elizabeth had made her a present at her confirmation, and which she had placed in this chapel, was stolen.

All the officers of the police were set in motion to discover the perpetrator of so daring a theft, but in vain. "Ah!" said Catherine, "it is not the loss of the diamonds, but of the holy image, I regret. I would give double its value to recover it." Her prayers were heard: after great search had been made, and several persons had been imprisoned, the image was found in the course of a few days, stripped of all its valuable ornaments, in the snow near the Admiralty. Catherine, delighted at her good fortune, rewarded him who brought it, directed the image to be arrayed more richly than before, and replaced with ceremony on her altar.

The girls of the town, too, in Russia, are very devout. When they have a visitor, before they grant him any favours, they always veil their images and extinguish the candles placed before them.

I shall not particularize all the superstitions with which such a religion, if it deserves that name, must necessarily inspire an ignorant and enslaved people. It seems the present policy to thicken the cloud of errors which the genius of Peter, the humanity of Elizabeth and the philosophy of Catherine sought in some degree to attenuate.<sup>1</sup> While we pity the state

---

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps it will be matter of astonishment to the reader

of degradation under which a great people crouches, we should do justice to the enlightened Russians, by whom it is lamented: but they are enchained by prejudices, as the giant Gulliver by the Lilliputians;

---

to peruse the following article, translated from the *Imperial Gazette* of St. Petersburg:—

“ ST. PETERSBURG, 17th December, 1798.

“ In 1796 a coffin was found at the convent of Sumorin, in the city of Trotma, in the eparchy of Vologda, containing a corpse in the habit of a monk. It had been interred in 1568, yet was in a state of perfect preservation, as were also the garments. From the letters embroidered on these, it was found to be the body of the most venerable Feodose Sumorin, founder and superior of the convent, and who had been acknowledged as a saint during his life for the miracles he had performed.”

It is then stated, that the directing synod had made a very humble report on this occasion to His Imperial Majesty; after which follows the Emperor's ukase:—

“ We, Paul, &c., having been certified, by a special report of the most holy synod, of the discovery that has been made in the convent of Spasso-Sumorin, of the miraculous remains of the most venerable Feodose; which miraculous remains distinguish themselves by the happy cure of all those who have recourse to them with entire confidence; we take the discovery of these holy remains as a visible sign that the Lord has cast his most gracious eye, in the most distinguished manner, on our reign. For this reason we offer our fervent prayers, and our gratitude, to the Supreme Dispenser of all things, and charge our most holy synod to announce this memorable discovery throughout all our Empire, according to the forms prescribed by the holy church and by the holy fathers, &c. The 28th of September, 1798.”

Paul has enriched the Russian calender with a few festivals

his bonds were weak and imperceptible, as his enemies were minute, but every one of his hairs was separately fastened to the ground, and he was unable to raise his head.

---

in addition to those already mentioned: among others, those of the disinterred saint, and of the Madonna of Kasan, which he has ordered to be kept holy. Every child, too, that he has, gives rise to two new festivals, its birthday and its name-day; and Paul has nine children already!

## CHAPTER IX

## ON FEMALE GOVERNMENT

*Its influence on the women of Russia. Their Character—Immodesty—Manners—Baths—Talents—Charms.—The Princess Dashkof.*

RUSSIA offers an example truly singular in the annals of history. The same century has seen five or six women reign<sup>1</sup> despotically over an Empire, in which the women before were slaves to men who were themselves enslaved; where Peter I. was obliged to employ<sup>2</sup> force to raise them out of this barbarous state of debasement, and give them a place in society; where even now the code of slavery does not allow them a soul,<sup>3</sup> or count

---

1 Sophia, sister to Peter I.; Catherine I.; Anne I.; the Regent Anne; Elizabeth; and Catherine II.

2 Before Peter I. women did not appear at Court or in company, or even at their husband's tables. Peter issued an ukase directing husbands to let their wives appear in public, very wisely deeming the society of women necessary to civilize the nation; but he was often obliged to employ the officers of the police to conduct the ladies to the balls.

3 In the Russian language the word *soul* is employed to designate male slaves. Instead of asking a man how much he has a

them among human creatures. The reigns of these females afford a strong argument in favour of those nations who have never suffered the sceptre to be placed in hands that were formed for the distaff, for it would be difficult to find six reigns more prolific in wars, revolutions, crimes, disorders and calamities of every kind. That the manners of the Court were softened I am ready to allow; but then they were corrupted, and wretchedness increased in equal proportion with luxury and disorder. Abuses of every kind, tyranny and licentiousness, became the very essence of government.

The old proverb, "When women hold the sceptre, men guide it," is false or unmeaning. When women reign their lovers tyrannize over the people, and all in power plunder them. But, without entering into the political effects of petticoat government, which may well be considered as the extreme of baseness or extravagance in mankind,<sup>1</sup> I shall notice only the influence it has had on society and the female sex in Russia.

---

year, the question is, how many souls he has: and a man has frequently ten or twenty thousand, without reckoning those of the women, or his own, which certainly some may think least deserves to be taken into the account.

<sup>1</sup> From what contradiction have the offices of Empress, and of Queen, which require vigour both of mind and body, and knowledge or talents of every kind, been so frequently given to women? An

The existence of the Amazons appeared to me no longer a fable, after I had seen the Russian women. Had the succession of Empresses continued, we might perhaps have seen that nation of female warriors locally reproduced, and in the same clime where they formerly flourished.<sup>1</sup> Great energy is still observable in the women of the Slavonian nations, of which their history furnishes many proofs. That feminine activity, which love, tenderness and domestic cares absorb in other countries, the women of the North, who are born with more cold and robust constitutions, employ in search of sway and in political intrigue. They frequently experience a physical necessity of inspiring love, but their hearts seldom feel a want of returning it.

Under the reign of Catherine the women had assumed a pre-eminence at Court, which they carried

---

army of five hundred thousand men were at the disposal of Catherine, yet she would not entrust another woman with a single company! She directed the politics of Europe, and gave it peace or war, though a woman could not enjoy the most trifling office in it! Is there not great inconsistency in this conduct?

1 It is singular enough that in the same countries which were said to have been inhabited by a society of women, who proscribed all men, a society of *Zaporogue* Cossacks have since dwelt, who would not suffer a single woman among them, recruiting their force solely by carrying away youths from the neighbouring lands. This barbarous republic was destroyed by Potemkin, and they who composed it distributed in the different armies, or among the other Cossacks.

with them into society and into their own houses. The Princess Dashkof, that "Tomyris talking French," masculine in her tastes, her gait and her exploits, was still more so in her titles and functions of *director* of the Academy of Sciences and *president* of the Russian Academy. It is well known that she long solicited Catherine to appoint her colonel of the guards, a post in which she would undoubtedly have acquitted herself better than most of those by whom it was held. Catherine, however, had too much distrust of one who boasted that she had seated her on the throne, to confide such a place to her hands. One more female reign and we might have seen a woman general of an army, or minister of state.

Many Russian generals, who enjoyed some reputation in foreign countries, were at that period governed by their wives. Count V. Poushkin, who commanded in Finland, durst not make a movement till he had despatched a courier to his wife to consult her. Count Ivan Soltikof was as inferior to his wife in moral qualifications as in physical strength, and the minister of war trembled before the wrath of his better half. The reader must not suppose that this submission, which became almost general, was that gallant and chivalrous deference which has sometimes been paid to the ladies. Those whom I



have cited as examples were old, ugly and ill-tempered ; it was literally the submission of weakness to strength, of cowardice to courage, of imbecility to understanding. All the sex seemed to participate in the respect and fear which were paid to Catherine by her courtiers.

The same effects were frequently perceived at a distance from the Court. The wives of several colonels received the reports of the regiment, gave orders to the officers, employed them in particular services, dismissed them, and sometimes appointed them. Mrs. Mellin, *coloneless* of the regiment of Tobolsk, commanded it with a truly martial haughtiness, received the reports at her toilette, and regulated the mounting guard at Narva, while her good-natured husband was employed elsewhere.

On the Swedes attempting to surprise the place, she came out of the tent in regimentals, and marched against the enemy at the head of a battalion. Several women accompanied the army against the Turks. Potemkin's seraglio was always composed of handsome Amazons, who delighted in visiting the fields of battle, and admiring the handsome corpses of the Turks as they lay stretched on their backs, their scimitars in their hands, and with an air of defiance still in their countenances, as the Argant of Tasso appeared to the gentle Herminia.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> After the assault of Otchakof heaps of dead bodies were

The masculineness of the women is still more observable in the country. Something of this character, no doubt, may be remarked in all countries where the men are slaves; for here widows, or daughters come of age, are often obliged to take on themselves the government of their estates, the people of which are their wealth, and are considered as their property, like so many cattle. In this case they are engaged in businesses by no means suitable to their sex. To buy, sell and exchange slaves, assign them their tasks, and order them to be stripped and flogged in their presence, would be as repugnant to the feelings as to the modesty of a woman in a country where men are not degraded to the level of domestic animals, and treated with the same indifference<sup>1</sup>; but these are offices which the Russian women are often obliged to perform, and not unfrequently they perform them with pleasure.

The habit of treating men thus, and that which both

---

piled up on the Liman, then frozen over, and remained there till the thaw. Round these pyramids the Russian ladies used to take the air in their sledges to make their observations.

1 A French woman from St. Domingo informed me that several Creolian ladies were not more scrupulous than those of Russia. Some of them go themselves on board the slave-ships, to select and purchase slaves, who are exhibited to them quite naked. A well-made negro of twenty-five is called *un nègre toutes pièces*, "a negro at all points."

sexes have of mixing together in their public baths, deaden, at a very early age, that modesty which is natural to women, and I have seen some as bold as the most impudent men.<sup>1</sup>

This effontery in some Russian women must not be ascribed to libertinism or gross licentiousness. They live from their childhood in the greatest familiarity with a herd of their slaves; a thousand private and even secret services are performed for them by male slaves, whom they scarcely consider as men. Their domestic manners afford them daily opportunities of satisfying, and even anticipating, their curiosity respecting all the mysteries of nature, and stifling in the birth the irritability of their nerves. Only an equal can put them to the blush; to them a slave is not a being of the same species.

I have already mentioned the revolting manner in which men are treated in Russia. A man's sensibility must be deadened, and his heart already hardened by spectacles of cruelty, for him to behold for a single mo-

---

<sup>1</sup> Being once at the house of a lady in the country, she was desirous of amusing herself with fishing. She sent for nets, and ordered some of her servants to strip and go into the water. They immediately stripped themselves in the presence of their mistress, and she gave them directions in their fishing with all the unconcern imaginable.

ment, without indignation and horror, the punishments sometimes inflicted on slaves. But, it must be confessed, it is still more revolting to see women present, and even presiding at them, or sometimes inflicting the punishments themselves. I have been at tables where, for some trifling fault, the master has coolly ordered a footman a hundred blows with a stick, as a mere matter of course; and he has been immediately conducted into the court, or into the ante-chamber only, in presence of the ladies, married and unmarried, who continued to eat and laugh while they heard the cries of the poor fellow being cudgelled.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 The little reflection with which a man is ordered to be bastinadoed produced a strange blunder a few years ago. Count Bruce, governor-general of St. Petersburg, had a slave for his cook, who ran away. At Court he saw Kleief, the master of the police, and gave him orders to make the necessary search in order to recover his cook. This was done, but in vain. Just at this period a French cook arrived from Warsaw, who was come to seek employment in Russia, and had been recommended to Kleief by one of his friends in Poland. Kleief, thinking to provide the man a place at once, sent him immediately to Bruce, telling the Frenchman that he need only say he came from him. Accordingly, Count Bruce was informed by his servant that a cook was come, sent by the master of the police. "Oh," said he, "my fellow is come, is he? Let him have two hundred stripes immediately, and then conduct him to the kitchen." The servants of the governor immediately seized the poor devil, and conducted him to the riding house. There, in spite of his cries and protestations, he received the punishment ordered. His surprise and terror may easily be conceived. He was left half-dead, and

I am not the first person by whom it has been observed that in Russia the women are usually more spiteful, more cruel, and more barbarous than the men; and it is because they are still much more ignorant and more superstitious. They scarcely ever travel, are taught very little, and do nothing. Surrounded by slaves to gratify or prevent their wishes, the Russian ladies spend their time lounging on a sofa or at a card table. They are very seldom seen with a book in their hands, still seldomer with any kind of work, or attending to their domestic affairs. They who have not been humanized by a foreign education are still actual barbarians. Among them you may find such women as Juvenal describes, where he mentions one who, speaking to a person that entreated her to spare a slave she was ordering to be punished, and conjured her to take pity on the man, answered: "Blockhead! is a slave a man?" and another, that said to some friends, who appeared frightened at some screams they heard while she was showing them her jewels and trinkets: "It is nothing at all; it is only a man I have ordered to be flogged."

If there were such women at Rome, what may be

---

scarcely able to crawl to the ambassador, to whom he made his complaint. Bruce, informed of his mistake, hushed up the affair for a few hundred roubles, which he gave the unlucky French cook.

expected at St. Petersburg and Moscow? Some horrible instances might be mentioned, were they not too dreadful and too indelicate to detail—they are sphinxes also, and proceeded from monsters in their kind; nor ought they even to be alluded to, but to show how far the ferociousness of a woman can carry her, when she seems authorized by the customs of the country. Ought we to be surprised if bad governments pervert the hearts of men, when they transform the gentler and more susceptible sex into raging beasts? One who bears the title of Princess, though she deserves not that of woman, by name K——ky, exhibits a picture of crimes, rage and turpitude at which the reader would shudder.

The outrages which she perpetrated on her slaves at Moscow obliged the brother of this Tisiphone to send her to St. Petersburg, to save her from the vengeance of the people. He was at length compelled to forbid her to employ her own slaves as domestics, and she was fain to hire free persons, who never stayed more than a day with her; and at length she was attended wholly by soldiers, who were sent to her house for the purpose.

This monster of cruelty is forty years of age, immensely tall, and of huge stature, resembling one of those sphinxes found among the gigantic monuments of Egypt. She is still living.

I knew another lady of the Court who had in her bedchamber a sort of dark cage, in which she kept a slave, who dressed her hair. She took him out herself every day, as you would take a comb out of its case, in order to dress her head, and immediately shut him up again, though seldom without his having had his ears boxed while she was at her toilette. The poor fellow had a bit of bread, a pitcher of water, a little stool and a chamberpot in his box. He never saw daylight but while he was dressing the periwig on the bald pate of his old keeper. This portable prison was kept close at her bed's head, and carried with her into the country. And her husband permitted this abomination! How could he sleep undisturbed by the sighs of the poor wretch, lying there shut up by his side? He spent three whole years in this *gehenna*; and when he made his re-appearance he was frightful to look at, pale, bent and withered like an old man. The chief motive of this strange barbarity was the wish of the old baggage to conceal from the world that she wore false hair; and for this she sequestered a man of eighteen from all human society, that he might renovate in secret her faded charms. The fasting and ill-treatment which she made him endure besides, were to punish him for having attempted to escape, and because, in spite of

all his art and care, she grew every day more old and ugly.

Still, I must repeat, I do not mention these infamous acts, not more incredible than they are true, as general and characteristic of the Russian ladies: they are the crimes of individuals; but these crimes could not have been committed except in Russia. In any other country the relations, the friends, the acquaintances of the Furies by whom they were perpetrated, would not have looked upon them as singularities of their humour; and the relations of the young man would have had a right to prefer a complaint against his mistress, and to demand justice.<sup>1</sup>

It was not at the Court and in domestic affairs only that the women assumed a superiority over the men. Nowhere did so many women arrogate to themselves the right of making the first advances, and being the active party, in affairs of love. The example of Catherine was but too well calculated to give them those bold and masculine tastes and manners.

Almost all the ladies of the Court kept men, with the title and office of favourites. I do not say lovers,

---

1 During the reign of Elizabeth a grandmother of these Furies had already distinguished herself by similar atrocities, and her relations were obliged to confine her.



for that would imply sentiment; while theirs was merely gross desire, or, frequently, a wish to follow the fashion. This taste was become as common as eating and drinking, or dancing and music. Tender intrigues were unknown, and strong passions still more rare.<sup>1</sup> Debauchery and ambition had banished love. Marriage was merely an association, in which convenience alone was considered; it was fortunate if friendship sometimes came, unsought, to lighten the chains which the interests of parents, or vanity alone, had formed.

The discovery of a society, called the Club of Natural Philosophers, made a few years ago at Moscow, completely proves the depravity of tastes and manners

---

<sup>1</sup> The young Princess Shakofsky, who was married to Count Aremborg, lately furnished a very tragical exception. At the period of the revolution in Brabant, in which her husband took an active part, Catherine ordered her to leave the seditious Count, and return to Russia, under pain of confiscation of all her property. She returned, under the care of her old mother, and Catherine declared her marriage null. One of her cousins ran away with her to Moscow, to marry her there, that he might the more easily obtain a dispensation afterwards. However, he possessed not the heart of his young wife, or, at least, did not occupy it entirely. She loved an officer in the guards, of the name of Kamasofsky. The jealousy of her husband having traced her rendezvous, and complained of them, the Princess poisoned herself, and died in dreadful convulsions. Her husband, a man of a melancholy cast, lost his reason for a time, and his happiness for ever.

under the reign of Catherine. This was a kind of order, surpassing in turpitude everything related of the most immodest institutions and mysteries. The men and women, who were initiated, assembled on certain days, to indulge promiscuously in the most infamous debaucheries. Husbands introduced their wives into this society, and brothers their sisters. The novices were not admitted till they had been examined and gone through their probations; the women being admitted by the men, the men by the women. After a sumptuous feast, the company were paired by lot. When the French Revolution took place, the Russian police were directed to examine and dissolve all kinds of orders and assemblies, and on this occasion the Club of Natural Philosophers was examined, and its members were obliged to disclose its mysteries. As the members of both sexes belonged to the most wealthy and powerful families, and their assemblies had nothing to do with politics, nothing more was done than to shut up and prohibit their scandalous lodge.

Many accounts of the Russian baths have been given; but, as they have a great influence on the character and manners of the women of the lower class in particular, it may not be amiss to speak of

them here with this view. On my arrival in Russia, one of my first objects was to examine them. I figured in my mind the voluptuous baths of Diana, and thought of nothing less than surprising the nymphs, like another Acteon. Accordingly, one day, I descended the banks of the Neva, with a friend, towards a public bath; but I had no occasion to go far before I was convinced that the Russian belles were accustomed to expose their charms to the eye of the passenger. A party of women, of all ages, tempted by the heat of the month of June, had not thought it necessary to go so far as the precincts of the baths. They had stripped themselves, and were swimming and sporting near the banks of the river. This spectacle, to which I was not accustomed, made the most lively impression on me, and I stopped and leaned over the quay, without my presence proving any interruption to the sports of the bathers.

I have since been several times in the baths, and I have seen similar sights on the banks of the islands of the Neva,<sup>1</sup> but, after what I have said,

---

<sup>1</sup> On one of these occasions, an old woman, seeing some men of her acquaintance bathing a little way off, swam up to them, and began a conflict with one of them. The young man not being a

more ample accounts are unnecessary. It is true there exists an ukase of Catherine, which enjoins the conductors of the public baths in the cities to construct separate baths for the two sexes; and not to allow any men to enter into the women's bath, except the necessary attendants, or painters and physicians, who come there to prosecute their studies. Accordingly, an amateur assumes one or other of these titles to obtain admission. At St. Petersburg both sexes now have their sweating rooms and baths separated by a partition, but many old women still prefer mixing with the men; and, besides, both men and women, after having taken the hot bath, run out perfectly naked to plunge together into the river that runs behind it. In the country the baths are still on the old footing; that is to say, persons of all ages and both sexes use them together, and a family, consisting of a father of forty, a mother of thirty-five, a son of twenty, and a daughter of fifteen, appear together in a state of innocence, and mutually rub down each other.

---

swimmer, his antagonist had the advantage, and, seizing him by the beard, she ducked him repeatedly, to the great amusement of both parties, as well as the spectators, who laughed heartily at the scene. This transaction took place near a part of the shore where persons of all ages and sexes were walking, and the young ladies in the neighbouring houses might enjoy it from their windows.

These customs, which appear to us so shocking, and which are so to all people who wear clothes and are no longer savage, are yet by no means the effect of corrupt hearts, and do not indicate libertinism. It is not even these baths, so conducive to the health of the Russians, that lead them into debauchery. On the contrary, the habit of seeing everything unveiled continually, and from an early age, deadens the senses and cools the imagination. A Russian youth will never feel his blood boil and his heart palpitate at the idea of a rising bosom. He never sighs after secret charms at which he scarcely dares to guess, for, from his infancy, he has seen and examined everything. The Russian maiden will never have her cheek overspread with an involuntary blush at an indiscreet idea or curiosity, and her husband will have nothing new to show or to teach her, nor will marriage have any novelty for her. Love is here a stranger to those delicate and exquisite approaches which constitute its true charms, and to those preludes to pleasure more delightful than pleasure itself. Where poignant sentiments do not ennoble the happiest of human passions, it becomes a mere momentary impulse, too easily gratified to be highly prized.

The land of slavery is not that of the noble

passions; it would be difficult to find in it the materials for a romance. Yet the Russian is sensible, gay, sings and dances willingly, and the collection of popular songs bears witness that he formerly felt the inspiration of love. In these an exquisite sensibility and affecting melancholy frequently appear, which interest and delight the reader.<sup>1</sup>

What I have said of the Russian ladies, among whom there are so many amiable and charming,<sup>2</sup> I fear, will tend to excite too unfavourable an idea of them. Almost all of them are naturally witty, and by no means destitute of grace. Their eyes, feet, and hands are everything that could be wished, and there is an ease in their manners, a taste in their dress, and a charm in their conversation, which are peculiarly agreeable.

These sprightly and amiable Russian ladies have

---

1 If a change of circumstances should take place, and I can renew my acquaintance with some of the men of letters in Russia, I shall some day make known a few pieces of this kind.

2 Perhaps the unfortunate chance which gave me a close view of the most malignant and contemptible of the sex has mingled some gall with my ink, in spite of myself. It must be confessed, likewise, that the girls appear as reserved and modest as the women do impudent. They are born susceptible of the most profound and gentle sentiments. It is with difficulty that examples and the general corruption render them depraved.

a taste for the arts. They laugh at the representation of a good comedy, readily perceive a satirical stroke, perfectly understand an equivoke, and applaud a brilliant line; but traits of sentiment appear lost on them, and I never saw one weep at a tragedy.

The domestic virtues, and that spirit of order and economy so necessary to a moderate fortune, are rarely to be found among the Russian women. They would rather be the delight of society than superintend their family affairs, and are more calculated to give pleasure to many than to confer happiness on one. But all the charms that luxury sets off, all the enchanting talents that ease of circumstances affords opportunity of cultivating, commonly heighten the beauty of the young Russians. They particularly excel in speaking foreign languages, and there are several who speak three or four in equal perfection.<sup>1</sup>

Those who have had a good education, whom the

---

<sup>1</sup> A Livonian lady, who has received a tolerable education, speaks German, which is her native language; Russian, with which she cannot dispense; and French, which is the language of fashion. To these, several add Italian, on account of music; and some, English. They speak, besides, the Livonian, or the Esthonian, which are the peculiar and original languages of their provinces. The Livonian women, however, are of a different character from the Russians.

manners of their families and the care of a prudent governess, or respectable mother, have formed to the graces, without moulding to vice; those, in particular, whom reading or some travelling has improved, deserve one of the first places among the amiable women of Europe.<sup>1</sup> But these are flowers thinly sown, and blooming in secret. Superstition, envy and calumny rage against them; and, if they cannot support the torture inflicted on them by the conversation of the gossips of the place, they are obliged to form a circle of select females, and especially foreigners,<sup>2</sup> which redoubles the hatred and persecution raised against them.

It will not be amiss to finish this delineation of the Russian women with some particulars of the Princess Dashkof, who, of all the women of Russia, next to Catherine, has been most the subject of conversation, and whose portrait would form a proper

---

1 I could easily mention some of these respectable women, as I have the despicable, but I shall not be blamed for sparing the modesty of those more than the impudence of these.

2 M. Kapiëf has written a tolerable comedy, in which he has endeavoured to display the ridiculousness of these gossips. The gaiety and mask of Thalia herself were requisite to render what is most stupid and insipid in life entertaining; but he dared not copy the originals with fidelity.



companion for that of Potemkin, were it drawn by the hand of the same master.<sup>1</sup> I will neither refute nor repeat what has been said a hundred times, in print, of this virago, the real heroine of the revolution of 1762. For some years the friendship between her and her royal mistress had singularly altered, and the following is the true cause of the last quarrel, which was never made up.

In hopes of gaining a few roubles, in 1794, the Princess directed a posthumous tragedy of Knaigenin<sup>2</sup> to be printed at the expense of the Academy. At any other period no notice would have been taken of this piece, the merit of which was trifling. But from the time of the French Revolution, and particularly after the death of Potemkin, Catherine had become fearful and suspicious. This tragedy was mentioned to her as a suspicious piece. It was prohibited; all the copies were seized, and search actually made for those that had been already sold. As the work had been printed

---

1 It may be found in a book entitled, "Vie de Catherine II." The author or compiler of this history, however, has been led into mistakes respecting a number of facts and persons. The Princess Dashkof was already in disgrace, and had left St. Petersburg, when he speaks of her as still there, and the outlines of the work are as false as they are improbable.

2 A Russian author of considerable repute.

by the express orders of Mrs. President Dashkof,<sup>1</sup> she was sent for by the Empress. "Good God, what have I done to you, that you should print such an infamous and dangerous work?" said Catherine, with great emotion; "if it be so great a crime to reign, was it not you who made me guilty of it?" The Princess, surprised at this pointed attack, said, in excuse, that she had no ill design, and had not even read the piece, having relied on the censor. To this Catherine sharply replied that, in such critical times, people should rely on no person, but do their duty themselves. Madame Dashkof, mortified at this reprimand, procured her nephew, Bakunin, to be vice-president, to supply her place, and asked permission to retire to Moscow, which was granted her. The censor was punished; and it was happy for the author that he was dead.<sup>2</sup>

---

1 The reader will pardon me this solecism, which is employed in the Russian. She was appointed, by an ukase, President and Director, in the masculine gender, and she was addressed by the title of *Madame le President*.

2 The scene of this piece, entitled *Vadime*, is laid at Novgorod-the-Great, at that time a republic, but oppressed by the Princes of Moscow, from whose yoke it was desirous of emancipating itself. This *Vadime* is the hero of the story, and the following passages, which are all that I preserved, are, I believe, the most alarming in the work. *Vadime*, conspiring to restore liberty to his country, says :

The Princess had long rendered herself odious and contemptible by her sordid avarice. This celebrated conspirator, who boasted of having given away a crown, sent to all the officers or aides-de-camp of her acquaintance, to beg old epaulettes and old lace. To untwist and sell these was become her chief employment, and persons who were interested in obtaining her favour began by sending her old gold or silver lace. She made no fires in winter in the apartments of the Academy, and yet expected that the Academicians should regularly attend the meetings. Many chose rather to expose themselves to her vulgar abuse, and lose their medals, than shiver in an ice-house: but the Princess never failed to be there, muffled up in rich furs, and it was a singular spectacle to see this lady only, seated in the midst of bearded popes and Russian professors, trembling and submissive before her, for she treated these Academicians with a haughtiness, and even brutality, worthy of Peter I. She took men of letters for soldiers, and the sciences for slaves.

---

"A king unites the weaknesses of a man with the power of a god."

"To wear a crown is sufficient soon to render a man corrupt and wicked."

Her adventure with Gregory Razomofsky made all St. Petersburg laugh, and rendered her contemptible in the eyes of every man of sense. She had sent him an academician's diploma unsolicited. Some time after she despatched to him a bale of Russian books to the value of about six hundred roubles (£60). Razomofsky declined them, saying that he had the originals of these Russian translations already in his library.<sup>1</sup> The Princess replied that she had created him an academician only on condition of his purchasing these books; and in consequence Razomofsky returned his diploma. The Princess wished to persuade the world that he was not in his senses; but the ridicule fell upon herself. Thus she prostituted her Academy: as to herself, she had done that long before.<sup>2</sup>

What rendered her completely ridiculous, both at Court and in the city, was her lawsuit with Alexander Narishkin, who had an estate near hers. One day

---

1 When I began to understand a little of the Russian language, I wished to read some of their original works; but I was astonished to find that what were given me for such was frequently a translation of some well-known work, but which was never mentioned in the title-page.

2 One day, having lost thirty roubles at cards to S——, she sent him the next morning thirty of the academy's almanacs by way of payment. I speak here only of her ridiculous meanness: the turpitude of her manners would carry me too far.

Narishkin's pigs got into the grounds of the Princess and devoured some of her cabbages. The heroine ordered them all to be massacred. Narishkin, seeing her at Court, said: "There she is, still red with the blood of——<sup>1</sup> my pigs."

Such was this celebrated woman, who prided herself on the share which she had in the revolution of 1762, who went to fisticuffs with her landlady in Holland, who attempted to blow out the brains of the poor Abbé Chappe at Paris, whom German authors, on whom she never bestowed a farthing, treated in vain as a genius, and who at last became a laughing-stock to all Russia.

---

<sup>1</sup> This marked pause brought to the hearer's mind Peter III., and the crimson face of the Princess was singularly suited to the expression used.

## CHAPTER X

## EDUCATION

*Anecdotes of the education of the Grand Dukes—Their governors and preceptors—Education of the Russians in general—Of the “outshiteli,” or tutors, and their influence—Of the young Russians—Proceedings of the present Emperor unfriendly to civilization—The “Gazettes”—Radischev—Fable of the owl and glow-worm.*

CATHERINE composed a plan of education for her grandchildren,<sup>1</sup> as she had also instructions for the legislation of her people. This plan, compiled from Locke and Rousseau, as the instructions had been from Montesquieu, Mably and Beccaria, does honour to the Empress's head; and had she possessed no other merit than that of adopting the ideas and maxims contained in it, this would not have been small. Had this plan been followed, Alexander and Constantine

---

1 This has never been printed. Catherine gave copies of it to the chief persons employed in educating the Princes, by which to regulate their mode of tuition. It was drawn up in the form of instructions, and addressed to Count Nicholas Soltikof.

Pavlovitch would certainly have been the best educated Princes in Europe. But it happened to Catherine's plan of education as it did to the instructions for her code. The compiling of the laws ended, as has been observed, with being abandoned to the management of a committee, which happily never assembled; and the education of the young Princes was entrusted to people scarcely capable of reading the plan, the letter of which they were to follow, and the spirit of which they were to study.<sup>1</sup> The only rule they appeared to comprehend was the following, probably because it was negative: "The Grand Dukes are to be taught neither poetry nor music; because it would occupy too much of their time to attain excellence in either." This rule they took pains to extend to all the sciences.<sup>2</sup>

---

1 In the badness of her choice here Catherine resembled Peter I. That illustrious instructor of his people was a very bad one for his only son. After having allowed him to spend his infancy with monks, priests and servants, he gave him for a governor Mentchikof, who, it is notorious, was never able to read. It is true that he appointed for his sub-governor a Dutchman, a man of knowledge, but who soon experienced the same fate as la Harpe, the tutor to the Grand Duke Alexander.

2 This has certainly the least merit of any rule in the instructions. Not that a prince should be made a fiddler or a poet; but it is impossible to give him too much taste for those arts which inspire and cherish sensibility of mind. The accurate sciences, which are said to render the judgment more exact, deaden the

It was the intention of Catherine, however, that her grandchildren should be instructed in every science capable of enlightening their reason or adorning their minds. A man of superior talents, la Harpe, was chosen for their first preceptor. He had incessantly to strive against the interested flattery and base adulation which surrounded them from the cradle. The ill-will and ineptitude of the chief persons concerned in their education were a still greater restraint upon him. But the esteem and confidence with which he was honoured by Catherine gave him encouragement; and the idea that he was rendering an important service to humanity by instilling useful truths into the minds of Princes called to decide the fate of so many millions, afforded him support. Inflexible in his course, he rendered himself beloved by one of his pupils, feared by the other, respected by those under him, and esteemed by his superiors. He was seconded by some of the cavaliers

---

feelings. History is the proper study of princes and regents. Without the *belles lettres*, Frederick the Great would have been nothing but a tyrant; with them Peter I. would have ceased to be a ferocious barbarian. God preserve all monarchies from having geometricians or mathematicians for their kings: they measure men by the yard, and reckon them as they would their money. The most important matter is to be humane, good and just; but with that justice which arises from a sense of truth, not that which is proved by  $a + b$ .



of honour that were appointed them<sup>1</sup>; and at some future period, perhaps, Russia will be more indebted to la Harpe than to his countryman le Fort; for, if Peter I. reformed and civilized his people, Alexander gives hopes of rendering them some day more free and happy.

The frankness with which la Harpe professed republican sentiments in Russia exposed him to the shafts of the envious. The Bernese, having seized his letters to his cousin, General la Harpe, sent them to Catherine. The Prince of Nassau and Esterhazy, whose wife is a native of Berne, were his accusers, and endeavoured to represent him as a very dangerous man in the confidential post he occupied. Catherine sent for him into her closet. The following are the particulars of the interview :—

“Come, sit down, Mr. Jacobin,” said Catherine; “I have something to say to you.”

“I must protest against the title which Your Majesty thinks proper to give me, and know not how I have deserved it.”

The Empress then showed him the letters she had

---

<sup>1</sup> Particularly the two *Morawiefs*, who cultivated literature and possessed considerable merit and talents, and one *Tutulmin*, a man of sense and good breeding.

received, and informed him of the charges brought against him.

To this la Harpe replied nearly in the following words: "Your Majesty knew, previous to entrusting me with the education of the Grand Dukes, that I was a Swiss, and consequently a Republican. I have not changed my sentiments; and you are too just, madam, to consider that as a crime in me now, which did not appear so then. My countrymen are oppressed by the Bernese; I exhort them to claim, by legal modes, our ancient rights: this is not being factious. For the rest, madam, I admire your great qualities, I respect your government, and I faithfully discharge the duties I imposed upon myself when I devoted myself to the education of the Grand Dukes. I shall always endeavour to render myself worthy of the confidence with which you have honoured me, by inspiring them with sentiments suitable to their birth and condition, and by endeavouring to render them capable of imitating, some future day, the example you have set before them. This, madam, is my defence: it remains with Your Majesty to pass judgment on me, after examining into my conduct in the post with which you have deigned to entrust me."

Catherine, struck with this frankness, replied :

"Sir, be a Jacobin, a Republican, or what you please : I believe you are a honest man, and that is sufficient for me. Stay with my grandchildren, retain my perfect confidence and instruct them with your wonted zeal.<sup>1</sup>"

Such was Catherine. Her conduct, as well as that of la Harpe, will be better appreciated when it is considered that this happened at the very period when the Austrians were flying before Dumouriez, soon after the death of Louis XVI., when Gustavus was dying from the wound inflicted by the assassin Ankerstrœm, when Leopold was said to have been taken off by poison, and when every king in Europe trembled on his throne. His accusers, however, though rebuffed, were not silenced ; but the marriage of the Grand Duke Alexander putting an end to the term of his education, la Harpe took his leave.

Nicholas Soltikof I have mentioned in another place. Chief governor of the young Princes, his principal occupations were to defend them from currents of air and keep their bodies open. Protasof, the governor of the elder, would have been more in his place had he been

---

<sup>1</sup> It was in a similar conversation that la Harpe one day made Catherine sensible of the danger of sending a Russian army against the French.

named apothecary. He came every day to make a circumstantial report to Soltikof of the most insipid particulars. Though a man of a narrow understanding, bigoted and pusillanimous, he had not a bad heart ; but he rendered himself ridiculous in the eyes of everyone, except his pupil ;—who saw in him nothing but his attachment to himself, for which he expressed his gratitude. ■

M. von Sacken was governor of the younger Prince, after having been preceptor to Paul. He was superior in every respect to his colleague ; but his easy and complying character rendered him the sport of his pupil,<sup>1</sup> whose petulance and want of application, as well as his unconquerable obstinacy, required a man of firmness constantly about him, and la Harpe alone retained some power over him, and might have been able to bend his natural ferocity had he been seconded.

Among the masters of the Grand Dukes, Professor Kraft, who gave them lessons in experimental

•

---

<sup>1</sup> Sacken was incessantly preaching to the Prince, and exhorting him to read. "I won't read," said Constantine to him one day, "for I see you always reading, and you only prove the greater blockhead for it." This sarcasm produced a laugh. He would strike and bite his governors, his chevaliers and his masters. La Harpe was the only person who complained, and requested he might be corrected.

22 2

philosophy, was distinguished for his good-nature, perspicuity and immovable methodicalness. Alexander Pavlovitch made some progress in this science, being attentive and desirous of learning, as he was in all his studies. Kraft, speaking one day of the hypotheses of some philosophers on the nature of light, said that Newton supposed it to be a constant emanation from the sun. Alexander, then twelve years of age, answered : "I do not believe it ; for, if it were, the sun must grow less every day." This objection, made with equal simplicity and acuteness, is, in fact, the strongest that has been brought against the immortal Newton, and proves the early sagacity of the young Grand Duke.

The celebrated Pallas was giving the Princes a short course of botany in their garden near Pavlofsky ; but the explanation of Linnæus's system of the sexes gave them the first ideas of those of human nature, and led them to put a number of very laughable questions with great simplicity. This highly alarmed their governors ; Pallas was requested to avoid entering into further particulars ; and the course of botany was even broken off. Catherine had particularly enjoined that her pupils should be kept in the most perfect ignorance in what related to the intercourse of the sexes. Her great modesty in this respect appears

strikingly contrasted with other parts of her character. But it is well known that the Regent of France, who was the most debauched of men, caused Louis XV. to be brought up in such complete ignorance of things, which he afterwards so extensively practised, that on the eve of his marriage he was obliged to be taught his part by being shown prints in which it was displayed. Catherine thought it better that her grandchildren should receive their first lessons in nature. At least, a lady of the name of T——kof was chosen to initiate the Grand Duke Constantine; from which she reaped the pleasure, as her husband did honour and promotion.

One of Catherine's most ardent wishes was to see her great-grandchildren like Louis XIV. That a moment might not be lost, she ordered the instant of their puberty to be watched; but her hope was frustrated by the very impatience with which she sought its accomplishment. These premature marriages appear only to have ruined their constitutions. Neither of the young Princes have as yet had any children, and it is to be feared they never will.<sup>1</sup>

The birth of the two Grand Dukes had filled the Empress with joy. Her vast projects and hopes

---

1 Their marriages have been mentioned in the first chapter.

expatiated in a wider field, of which the very names of the Princes gave intimation. She had the infants everywhere painted, one cutting the Gordian knot, the other bearing the Cross of Constantine; for them she was desirous of renewing the division of the world into two Empires. Their education seemed at first to be merely the development of these grand ideas. Constantine had Grecian nurses, and was surrounded by Greeks; in his infancy he spoke no other language, but he forgot it as soon as masters were appointed to teach it him in a better manner. The persons about Alexander were Englishmen, and endeavours were made to inspire him with a predilection for that nation, which he may, perhaps, some day discard, as his brother became disgusted with Greece.

I have already observed that Paul had neither authority nor influence over the education of his children. He was obliged to solicit Soltikof's permission to see them; or to gain their *valets de chambre*, to know what was doing with respect to them. During the summer they had permission to spend an hour or two with their parents once or twice a week. Paul deprived himself of this pleasure for one whole year, because he would not see the Countess Shuvalof, by whom they were latterly attended.

The Russians in general, following the example of their latter Sovereigns, had for some time endeavoured to emerge from barbarism, and attended to the education of their children with much care. To bestow on them knowledge and talents was formerly the happy means of bringing them into notice, and procuring them advancement. They spared neither pains nor expense to cultivate the arts and sciences in a country where these were strangers, as they force fruits to ripen in their winter gardens and hot-houses. Elizabeth and Catherine founded several institutions in favour of youth, some of which, as the Normal Schools, and particularly the three different corps of cadets, presented the interesting sight of several thousand young men educated at the expense of the State, and taught morality, languages, sciences and arts. Those are now either abolished or suffered to fall to decay.

The convent of young ladies, though the sentiments from which it was founded were worthy of the generosity of a great Princess, has completely failed of its end, like most of the other institutions. Two or three hundred young women of no fortune receive here an excellent education; but, as soon as they reach the age of eighteen, they are turned out of doors. They enter into a world from which they



have lived secluded since their infancy; seldom find either relations, or any who know them; and are ignorant whither to turn. In consequence, they fall victims to the officers of the guards, whose barracks surround the convent, and who watch every term of dismissal to ensnare the prettiest. It would be very practicable to save, out of the immense cost of their education, a sufficient sum to portion them, or, at least, to keep them till they were provided for.

The education of those young Russians who have some fortune is commonly entrusted to private governors, known and decried in Russia by the name of *outshiteli*, "teachers." Most of them are foreigners, chiefly French or Swiss. The Germans, in spite of their good qualities and pedagogical erudition, differ too widely in character from the Russians, to rival them; and the trials which some have wished to make of their own countrymen from the University of Moscow, or from the schools of St. Petersburg, have not given satisfaction. The famous answer of the Grecian philosopher is here applicable. To a man who said to him, "With what you ask for the education of my son I could purchase a good slave, who would educate him in my own house;" he replied, "Purchase a slave; he and your son will make two."

The *outshiteli*, whom some endeavour to ridicule, and others consider as dangerous, have contributed more than any others to polish Russia, as they have given instruction in detail, man by man. They are the only people whose office has been to preach philosophy, virtue and morals, while diffusing knowledge. To begin with the celebrated le Fort, who inspired Peter I. with the desire of gaining knowledge, and end with a petty clerk of some French attorney, who teaches his pupils to conjugate a few verbs in his own tongue, the *outshiteli* have been the persons who have communicated to the Russians that taste, those acquirements, and those talents, for which many of them are admired in foreign countries. No doubt it is to be lamented that, among the number of those who devote themselves to private tuition, and make it their trade to form men, there are so many unworthy of the employment, whose ignorance and immorality bring ridicule and odium on their colleagues. But such tutors begin to find it difficult to obtain situations, except in remote country places, where some honest Russians of the old stamp fancy they have bestowed a good education on their children, when they hear them speak a foreign language. At St. Petersburg people were become more difficult in the choice of tutors,

and among them were to be found persons of real merit. They were the only class of men in Russia, without excepting the Academicians, who cultivated literature and the sciences, which they did in some degree. A Brueckner, in the house of Prince Kurakin ; a Grammont, at the Princess Dolgoruky's ; a Lindqwist, an Abbé Nicole, and several others, without having places equally advantageous,<sup>1</sup> were worthy of the profession to which they devoted themselves, and were distinguished for their success as much as for their merit.

The great men of Russia, who have much wealth and high posts, are too ignorant, or too much engaged in gaming and intrigue, to interfere with the education of their children ; and as colleges and universities are wanting in that country, they pursue a very prudent plan. As soon as they have made choice of the man who is to supply their place in the duties of a father, they confer on him great power and confidence ; the most intelligent could not do better, were they discerning in their choice. It is seldom that a governor is so destitute of sense, information and honour as to

---

1 M. Brueckner received thirty-five thousand roubles (£3,500) for the fourteen years he engaged to devote to the education of the young Princes Kurakin ; and Grammont received twenty-five thousand (£2,500) for the education of the Princes Dolgoruky.

abuse his functions; he feels himself most happily disposed towards his pupil; to instruct him, form him, acquire his attachment, and gain his love, are the wishes of his heart. If he be in a worthy, opulent house, he has no occasion to regret the sacrifice of ten or twelve years of his life, as he will be provided for.<sup>1</sup> In his pupil he often finds a real friend, and always a protector. His own interest prompts him to inspire his pupil with just and noble sentiments, and to give him a taste for the sciences; which is far more important, and far more difficult, than to teach him the elements of them. Thus, most of the young Russians pass their early days with a foreigner, who becomes their second father, and for whom they retain a due sense of gratitude if they are in the least well born.

This education by means of foreigners has one peculiar effect. Almost all the Russians, being educated by Frenchmen, contract from their infancy a decided predilection for France. With its language and history

---

<sup>1</sup> The great French lords sometimes gave rich abbeys to their tutors; the wealthy English act still more generously. The Russians frequently follow their example; their governors receive annuities at their departure, or places and rank if they settle in Russia. Thus, at least, those have acted who have not considered the tutors of their children as their head servants.

they are better acquainted than with their own; and as, in fact, they have no country, France becomes that of their heart and imagination. Thus was the Scythian Anacharsis educated by Theogenes the Greek; thus were the Romans formed by Grecian masters; but the Romans had virtues to lose, which is scarcely the case with the Russians. Besides, they learn to know France only in the most pleasing aspect, as it appears when at a distance. They are taught to consider it as the country of taste, politeness, arts, delicate pleasures, and amiable men; as the asylum of liberty, as the altar of that sacred fire at which the torch may one day be kindled to illumine their benighted country. The French emigrants, driven to the territories of the modern Cimmerians, were astonished to find there men better acquainted than themselves with the affairs of their own country; but these were young Russians who had read, and meditated on what they read, from Rousseau and Mirabeau; the emigrants had read nothing, and brought nothing with them but their prejudices. Many young Russians were better acquainted with Paris than those who had spent their lives in roaming about its streets.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Count Butturlin had obtained this local knowledge to that degree that he could carry on the most minute conversation with

It has in general been remarked that the Russians have the most happy dispositions, and a surprising readiness of conception; whence they make a very rapid progress in everything that is taught them. There are no children more amiable or more interesting; many, when their domestic education is finished, have acquired more select and extensive knowledge than other young men who have frequented the German universities; and they have particularly a wonderful readiness at displaying their knowledge on seasonable occasions. Too frequently, however, these are precocious flowers, that produce no fruit; they seldom travel like an Anacharsis; and their return to their own country usually puts an end to their studies, and even to their taste for science and literature.

Telle on voit s'élever l'alouette légère;  
Elle charme un instant par son chant matinal,  
Puis retombe et se tait sur le gazon natal.<sup>1</sup>

So the gay lark, with light ascending wing,  
Soars high in air to charm the meads around,  
Till ceasing thus in strain sublime to sing,  
Silent he sinks upon his natal ground.

In the same manner a Swiss, after having spent

---

a Parisian on the theatres, streets, hotels, and public buildings of Paris. The Frenchman was astonished when the Russian confessed, at last, that he had never been in France.

1 From an epistle to a young Russian.

his youth in the service of France, and contracted splendid vices, leaves them on his return to his own country, to resume the simplicity of his ancestors. He returns to virtue, but the Russian returns to barbarism. Strong minds alone, fully captivated with the charms of philosophy, or the attractions of true glory, can resist the torrent; for those talents, which the Emperors pretended to encourage, became at length a motive for exclusion from the posts and honours of the Court. Thus the manners of Europe, and even the character of Catherine, were in perpetual contradiction with the barbarous forms and impulse once given to the Russian Government. The influence of foreign preceptors over the character and morality of the Russians is combated by prejudices and obstacles almost invincible; but this influence is constant and continual; it operates in secret on the mind; and its progress, slow as the foot of Time, is but the more certain. Perhaps the young Russian nobility are the best informed and most philosophical in Europe, but a complete counter-revolution has just taken place in their education; since the progress of the French Revolution, especially since the commencement of the reign of the present Emperor, and the arrival of the emigrants, the human mind has taken a retrograde

course in Russia. Most of the *outshitelis* at present are chevaliers, counts, marquises, or priests; for the same thing has taken place with the emigrants as did formerly with the colonists whom Catherine imported to cultivate her deserts; all who could read and write left their fields to become tutors. But the effects of this will be transient; the new trade adopted by these gentlemen will teach them to think, or they will not pursue it long. It is almost impossible to be an *outshiteli* without becoming in some degree rational; what is heard, seen and felt every day in these territories must operate in favour of liberty. A Montmorency in the post of a tutor could not fail to become a democrat.

In the *Voyage de deux Français en Russie*, "Tour of two Frenchmen in Russia," are some strange reflections on these *outshiteli*. The travellers are astonished that they are almost all democrats, though enjoying an easy and agreeable life in the house of a great lord; and rally them for not quitting this, to devote their lives to the cause which they espouse. "You say that they are acting properly in France; why, then, do you not go thither?" This is the dilemma proposed by these gentlemen. But, were anyone to praise the custom in China for the Emperor to plough a field himself, would



they in the same manner say to him, "Why do you not repair thither and hold the plough?" Such is the inconsistency of people! May not a man acknowledge the truth of a principle, all the consequences of which he cannot carry into practice? Must not a Frenchman in St. Petersburg rejoice at the victories of his country because he could contribute nothing to them but his secret prayers? May he not rejoice to see liberty, order and happiness re-established in his country, though he cannot return thither? Such is the language of little minds, who dare not avow a truth when they are in a place where it is dangerous not to deny it.

The progress of the human mind in Russia, however, has lately been stopped, or at least fettered, by the measures, certainly consistent, adopted by the Emperor to interrupt all communication between the rest of Europe and his dominions. Peter I. never took so much pains and care to reform and polish his Empire as Paul does precautions to prevent light from spreading among his Cimmerians.

A sharper code of laws could not be exhibited to Europe than a collection of the ukases promulgated by Paul, since he came to the throne. He has lately forbidden all his subjects, the Livonians and Courlanders in particular, to send their children to study in Germany,

because corrupt principles prevail there. He recalls, under penalty of confiscation of their property, all who are at present at any foreign university<sup>1</sup>, but he promises to permit the establishment of an university in his German provinces, where young men may be instructed in the most necessary sciences. Till this university is founded under his auspices, and the disciples of Kant quit Germany, to visit it in quest of a more luminous philosophy, the Finlanders and Courlanders, Esthonians and Livonians, must remain without any means of instruction; for there are not even any public schools throughout their vast provinces. Paul has also forbidden the employment of foreigners in his courts of justice, and the giving them ecclesiastical benefices. He has even gone farther. By another ukase, he has prohibited all foreigners from entering his dominions without his special permission. This *immenoï-ukase* has not been published, but merchants, foreigners who have property in Russia, and young men who have been sent for thither, are stopped at the frontiers, or on board the vessels in which they arrive, and sent back, after all the expense and danger they have incurred.

---

<sup>1</sup> There were thirty-six students at Leipzig, and sixty-five at Jena, subjects of the Tzar, who have just returned home in consequence of this ukase.

Another ukase prohibits the reading of French newspapers. No paper can enter Russia without having been examined and stamped by a committee of inspection; and every man who receives by the post, by a courier, or from a traveller, any newspaper or printed book of any kind, is enjoined to carry them immediately to the committee, under penalty of being punished as a rebel!

The people of Germany are more happy, for the Russian newspapers are admitted into that country, though much cannot be said for the amusement or instruction which they contain.

It is to be observed that, under the reign of Catherine, Russia was, for a time, the only country in Europe in which French papers were not prohibited. The *Moniteur*, having spoken several times of the Empress, and particularly of Paul and his Court, Catherine gave orders that it should not be distributed till she had looked it over. A few weeks after, she found a paragraph in which she was styled the "Messalina of the North," &c. Having read it she said: "As this concerns only myself, let it be distributed." At a time when French gazettes, cockades, and songs were proscribed in nations farthest from barbarism; when, at Turin, they who sang "*ça ira*" were

imprisoned, and at Vienna, French was not allowed to be spoken, the Russian Government appeared to be above these little inquisitorial acts, and the pupils of Colonel la Harpe were allowed to chaunt French revolutionary airs in the Palace of the Tzars. One of these carried a national cockade in his pocket, which he displayed with an air of triumph and defiance to the most timorous courtiers. It was not till after the death of Louis XVI., and the assassination of Gustavus III., that Catherine, struck with terror, began to yield to the suggestions of her favourites, and to take precautions which betrayed her fear.<sup>1</sup>

Still there was always more to be apprehended from the zeal of the subordinate tools of Government, than from the disposition of Catherine. Among the numerous victims of the political inquisition, Radischef deserves particular regret. It is well known that Catherine frequently sent young Russians to travel

---

<sup>1</sup> One fact will further prove the noble security of Catherine. A brother of Marat was at St. Petersburg, governor in the house of Soltikof, the chamberlain. This Marat, while he condemned the rage of his brother, did not conceal from his friends his republican sentiments, yet he lived in peace, and sometimes attended his pupil to Court. However, as his name might have exposed him to some danger, at the time of the King's death he requested Catherine's permission to change it, and called himself Boudri, from the place of his birth.

and improve themselves at her expense. Several of these were happily chosen, became men of merit, and brought back to their country notions of humanity with the knowledge they acquired. The most distinguished and most unfortunate of these pupils of Catherine was Radischef. On his return he became director of the customs, and in this office of a publican, his probity, the amenity of his manners, and his agreeable company, rendered him esteemed and courted. He cultivated literature, and had already published a work entitled *Potshta Dukof*, "The Rest of Spirits," the most philosophical and pointed periodical production that ever ventured to appear in Russia. No disturbance had been given him on account of this, but after the Revolution he had the courage to print a little pamphlet, in which he did not scruple to avow his hatred of despotism, his indignation against the favourites, and his esteem for the French. It was singular that several copies of it contained the approbation of the police. Kleïef, master of the police, as famous in Russia for his blunders, as a d'Argenson, a la Noir, and a Sartine were in France for their address, was cited to answer for this approbation. He knew not what to say, for he had not read the work, which, indeed, would have been beyond his comprehension. But Radischef, who was also cited,

honestly confessed that the boldest passages were not in the manuscript when he submitted it to the censors, but that he had printed them at his own house.<sup>1</sup> To have pardoned him would have been worthy of the character which Catherine displayed on other occasions, but Radischef was sent off to Siberia. He begged permission to embrace his wife and children once more, and when he was taken out of his prison to be sent off, he was allowed to wait for them a moment on the bank of the Neva; but it was night, the drawbridge had just been raised to let a vessel through, and at this instant his unfortunate wife arrived on the opposite bank. Radischef entreated that his departure might be deferred till the vessel had passed or his wife could get a boat; but in vain. His pitiless guard made him get into his tumbrel again in sight of his distracted wife, who

---

<sup>1</sup> Radischef's work is entitled, "A Journey to Moscow." Russian merchants have been known to give five-and-twenty roubles (£2 10s.) to have it for a single hour to read in secret. I have read only a few fragments of it, among which was an allegory, in which he exposes the pride and foolish grandeur of a despot surrounded by dastardly flatterers. The following words particularly enraged Catherine, because they were pointedly directed at her: "I enter the palace of Tzarsko-selo. I am struck with the alarming silence that reigns. Everyone holds his peace, everyone trembles; for it is the abode of despotism." These words procured Radischef a residence in Siberia.

stretched out her arms to him across the river with loud cries. Thus he departed, his heart torn by despair. If he be still living in the vast deserts to which he is confined, or if he draw breath in the mines of Kolivan, may his virtue be his comforter ! His courage, however, has not been useless. In spite of the searches made after every copy, his work remains in the hands of several of his countrymen, to whom his memory is dear.

The proscription of everyone who dared to think, suggested the following fable, when the present Emperor was Grand Duke :—

## LE GRAND DUC<sup>1</sup> ET LE VER LUISANT

### FABLE

DANS une sombre nuit d'été  
Un ver luisant caché sous l'herbe  
Jetait une douce clarté.  
Ce n'était point un phare éclatant et superbe,  
Il n'éclairait qu'un pas à l'environ ;  
C'était là son horizon :  
Mais pourtant l'insecte lucide  
Servait de guide  
Aux petits hôtes du gazon.

---

<sup>1</sup> A nocturnal bird, found particularly in Russia.—(See Buffon.)  
*Duc*, in French, signifies both a duke and a horned owl: *le grand duc* is the great horned owl in natural history.—*T.*

A sa lueur douce et tranquille,  
 La fourmi retardée atteignait son azile,  
 Le papillon léger s'égayait à l'entour :  
 En un mot, cet astre reptile  
 Embellissait les nuits de son humble séjour.  
 Non loin de là, dans une vieille tour,  
 Prison de sa triste famille,  
 Un vieux hibou tenait sa cour.  
 Un hibou hait les *vers* qui lui montrent le jour.  
 "Audacieux !" dit il à l'insecte qui brille,  
 "Qui t'a fait si hardi que d'approcher de nous ?  
 Tu mourras."—" Monseigneur," lui répond l'humble insecte,  
 "Je suis indigne, hélas ! d'un si noble courroux.  
 Je vous honore, vous respecte ;  
 Je tremble d'approcher de vous :  
 A sucer la rosée ici je me délecte ;  
 Mais d'aucun bruit pourtant je ne trouble vos nuits.  
 Comment un animal faible comme je suis  
 Peut-il offenser Votre Altesse ? "  
 "Insecte dangereux ! *tu lui* ;  
 Pêris, la lumière me blesse."  
 Cela dit, le nocturne oiseau,  
 En écrasant le ver, éteignit son flambeau  
 Sans rendre la nuit plus épaisse.

## THE OWL AND THE GLOW-WORM

### A FABLE

'Twas on a sombre summer night,  
 A glow-worm, shelter'd by a flow'r,  
 Spread round its paly glimm'ring light,  
 To decorate the silent hour :



No brilliant beam, no gaudy glare,  
Diffus'd afar its lustrous ray,  
But thro' the softly-breathing air  
The insect shed its mimic day.

While pleas'd its harmless life to pass  
On hillock green of dewy grass,  
Attracted by its azure gleam,  
The butterfly, with sportive wing,  
Would form the gay fantastic ring  
(As in the burning noontide beam),  
Where, 'mid the gloom, this insect star display'd  
Its cheerful lamp, spangling the realms of shade!

Near, on a mould'ring antique tow'r,  
The prison of its moping race,  
An owl had chose its murky bow'r,  
And hating day's effulgent light,  
Its joy the sullen frown of night,  
Its blank domain the silent space!  
There, prompt to spread its shad'wy wings  
Imperious, o'er less daring things,  
Soon on the glow-worm's peaceful state,  
Fix'd his dull eyes, in envious hate.

"Bold worm!" exclaim'd the tyrant vain,  
"Thou, who with sparkling light art seen  
Peering the lonely shades between,  
How dar'st thou mock my gloomy reign?  
Thou shalt expire!" The glow-worm meek  
(Its trembling light, more faint and pale),  
In humble accents, low and weak,  
Thus told its true, but artless tale:  
"I own that, of the insect race,  
I boast no gaudy, splendid grace;

I light with feeble lamp the way  
Where prouder, loftier beings stray;  
I sip the balmy dews around,  
But ne'er am heard with busy sound;  
Ne'er on your calm repose obtrude  
With counsel vain, or clamour rude;  
Can *I* offend superior things,  
Or cope with birds of pow'rful wings?"

The owl, indignant, bold, and base,  
Exulting o'er the insect race,  
Replied, "*You shine!* detested thing!  
To me offensive *light* you bring."—  
Then, pouncing on his humble prey,  
Darken'd, in death, its little ray;  
But found, tho' quench'd the quiv'ring flame,  
*His* sombre hour was still *the same!*

## CHAPTER XI

SUPPLEMENT<sup>1</sup>

*French and Swiss in Russia—Their proscription—Oath required of them—Billet of absolution—Additional traits of the present Emperor—Reflections.*

UNFORTUNATE young men, whom false accounts and fallacious hopes attract from various countries to the stormy banks of the frigid Neva, may you be at length undeceived by the sketches I have drawn and those I am about to trace.<sup>2</sup> Of a thousand who abandon their country to seek wealth and happiness at a distance from it, few find the former in Russia; the latter,

---

<sup>1</sup> This article has been in part compiled by the editor from fragments and notes left by the author, and oral but indisputable information.—NOTE OF THE FRENCH EDITOR.

<sup>2</sup> It is no longer possible for a Frenchman or Swiss to enter Russia. An artist and two Misses de Mont-Béliard, having been sent for to fill particular places, could not obtain leave to disembark, notwithstanding the strongest recommendations, and were ordered to depart immediately.

none. The rest sigh out their lives in penury and regret, or vegetate under the rigours of an inclement sky. The remembrance of their youthful sports, and the manners of their country, is the only pure pleasure which the most worthy taste. Amid the abundance and dissipation in which many pass their monotonous lives, they experience a vague disquiet that alarms them; the heavy air of Russia seems to press on their brows and bend them towards the earth; they grow old speedily; their blood thickens, and their soul becomes mere matter. Thus Ovid depicts the gradual metamorphosis of Daphne: "The rude unyielding bark envelops her heart, which still beats, but feels no longer. She loses the faculty of thought before she loses existence; and, ceasing to live, begins to vegetate."

Happy, however, he who attains this animal vegetation! He is, at least, insensible of the revolting scenes that surround him and of his own degradation; while the man who retains his sensibility is incessantly tormented by the indignation which degraded humanity inspires.

Of all the strangers who happened to be in Russia during the Revolution, the French and Swiss were most exposed to inquisitorial vexations. The very

name of Frenchman was an affront ; and the Russian populace, who were in themselves peaceful, tolerant and hospitable, were stirred up against them. Men who had before rendered themselves distinguished by their capacity, knowledge and talents, many of whom held important posts at Court or in the army, or confidential situations in private families—courtiers, officers, tutors, artists, players, chamberlains, cooks,<sup>1</sup> &c.,—instantly became objects of hatred, distrust and proscription. Catherine, who had herself accustomed the Russians to some liberal opinions, on a sudden adopted the opposite principles. The death of Louis XVI. and the arrival of the emigrants were the signals of proscription. The emigrants particularly sought to accuse and supplant such of their countrymen as did not participate their opinions ; and the ancient French, who beheld the light of the Revolution from afar, without seeing the firebrand whence it issued, who embraced its principles with the more candour, because men of worth and letters had long borne them in their hearts,

---

<sup>1</sup> One le Bœuf, French cook to the late King of Prussia, having been sent for by Catherine, did not arrive till after her death. The present Emperor clapped him into prison. There he remained six months before he obtained his liberty, and then was ordered to depart immediately, without the slightest indemnification.

were the first attacked ; cowards, knaves, hypocrites and valets, who began loudly to exclaim against innovation, were alone spared.

One of the first victims was Cuinet d'Orbeil, who was known in all St. Petersburg, and even in other parts, by his poetical pieces in the *Almanachs des Muses*. He was a Frenchman of a warm heart and warmth of expression ; a poet in the common acceptation of the word, but incapable of undertaking anything, or plotting anything, at which the Government could have reason to be alarmed. The Court was at Peterhof, celebrating the festival of St. Peter. The fountains played, a ball was given, and the place was illuminated. These rejoicings attracted the more company because the Empress had not visited Peterhof for several years, as she had an aversion for that palace, which must have inspired her with gloomy thoughts.<sup>1</sup> In the midst of the feasting, a courier arrived with news of the escape of Louis XVI. The rumour was great, the joy loud, and the dance interrupted, while the news passed triumphantly from ear to ear. Count T——, who knew d'Orbeil, met him coming out of the Em-

---

<sup>1</sup> Peterhof was the palace she inhabited at the period of the revolution in 1762. Peter III. was arrested there, and strangled in an adjacent house.

press's saloon. "Well, Mr. Democrat," said he to him, "have you heard the great news?"—"Yes," answered d'Orbeil, who was just come from St. Petersburg; "I have heard some great news."—"Do you know that the King has escaped from Paris?"—"Yes, Count; but do you know the still greater news, that he is re-taken?" These words were a clap of thunder to the hearers. The fact was, two couriers had arrived at St. Petersburg nearly at the same time; but he who announced the happy escape of the King having been despatched immediately to the Empress to heighten the festivity of the day, no haste was made to send off the second to disturb it. The conversation of d'Orbeil with the Count, however, having been in some degree pointed, he was from that time observed and watched. A short time after, a few expressions in favour of the Revolution escaped him at la Huss's, an actress kept by Markof, secretary of state, in consequence of which he was taken in the night from the house of M. Tshernichef, conveyed to a vessel in the harbour, and put down into the hold. The surprise and fright turned his brain; he contrived to get out, and threw himself into the sea.

Such events occurred towards the end of Catherine's reign, when silly courtiers and emigrants besieged

her with fears and suspicions; yet she was frequently seen to resume her justice and even her natural generosity. At the time this happened, Mioche, another Frenchman, having been denounced as a patriot by the emigrants, was likewise thrown into prison; but Catherine soon ordered him to be set at liberty, and indemnified him for his sufferings by some particular exemptions which she granted him in the wine trade.

The present Emperor makes the principles of justice consist in his infallibility. He cannot mistake; nobody can deceive him. In consequence of this opinion of his, which is well known, they who wish to establish themselves in his good graces begin by confessing themselves guilty of some fault, even if they invent one for the purpose. Woe to him who endeavours to prove his innocence!

One of the most striking acts of injustice, which excited much indignation in honest men of all parties, was the proscription of Colonel and Major Masson, which distinguished the commencement of his reign.

These two brothers, who were either Swiss or Würtembergers, had served in the Russian army from their youth, and acquired some reputation in it. One of them, who had been aide-de-camp to Potemkin, having made the campaigns against the Turks with him, had



obtained as military rewards the cross and gold-hilted sword which Catherine bestowed on such officers as distinguished themselves. He had married a niece of the celebrated General Melissino, who died lately in the post of grand master of the ordnance. The other, after having been some time in the artillery, and afterwards aide-de-camp to Count Soltikof, minister of war, had been placed about the person of the Grand Duke Alexander, after the departure of Colonel la Harpe. He had also married a Russian lady, of a Livonian family of distinction. Both of them, having an inclination for science and literature, led retired and tranquil lives with their families; beloved for the amenity of their manners, and esteemed for their wit and understanding. These two superior officers, who had been in the service twelve years, both married to Russian women, related to families of respectability and possessing lands and slaves, were torn from their wives and children by a private order of State, and carried away separately, in covered sledges, under a strong guard, without even knowing of what crime they were accused. The wife of the younger, but just recovered from a lying-in, urged by despair, went the next day to wait for the Emperor under the arches of his winter palace, and loudly demanded justice for her husband.

"Your husband is guilty," answered Paul; "begone, lest you should be trampled on by my horse." The unfortunate lady fainted on the ground, and the Emperor passed on. The indignation inspired by this act of power was recorded in a citation, which the friends and relatives of Messieurs Masson ventured to publish; and of which the following is a literal translation:—

"Pressing citation and prayer to Messieurs von Masson, late officers in the Russian service.<sup>1</sup>

"These two brothers served several years in the Russian Empire, where they acquired the reputation of being men of courage and understanding. The elder was colonel, chevalier, &c.; the younger, major. Both were married; the former to the daughter of General Yhrmann, a brave and respectable soldier, lately dead, after having long and loyally served the State;<sup>2</sup> the latter, to a Baroness Rosen, of a Livonian

---

1 See the Journal entitled *La Minerve*, par M. d'Archenholz, May, 1797, p. 366. "Ernstliche Aufforderung und Bitte, an die, in russischen diensten gestandenen, Herren von Masson."

2 General Yhrmann was governor-general of Siberia, and director of the mines of Kolivan, for twenty years. The sums he drew from them were greater than they ever yielded before or since, as the registers attest. He augmented the civilization, population, commerce, and welfare of those vast provinces; and retired poor, after having long superintended the working of the richest gold and

family, well-known and esteemed.<sup>1</sup> Both had lovely children, and lived with their families as good fathers. The elder even possessed estates in Esthonia.

“ One day last December (1796), the two brothers were summoned before General Arkarof, director-general of the police. With him they found one Count de Plaisance, an officer in the corps of cadets of the artillery, a man whose very existence seems to accuse Nature of an illiberal joke. This man had written a letter to Moscow, in which he said to his friends, among

---

silver mines on the Continent. As a reward of his probity, the Crown did not even pay him 10,000 roubles (£1,000) which are still owing to him; and his only daughter, proscribed with her husband, wanders far from the tomb of her worthy father. She is likewise niece to the celebrated General Melissino, who has rendered Russia such great services; and related to the Dolgorukies and Soltikofs.—  
NOTE OF THE FRENCH EDITOR.

1 Catherine II., wishing to reduce Livonia to the same form of slavery as the other provinces, required, according to her custom, that the Livonians themselves should come to implore these new chains as a favour. The deputies were sent accordingly with those of the other nations; but General Rosen, father of the person here mentioned, who was at the head of the deputies, far from subscribing what was required of them, made some remonstrations to Catherine, who said, with rage: “ Who gave you the boldness thus to oppose my will? ”—“ The name of Peter the Great, who signed our liberties; and that of Catherine the Great, who has sworn to maintain them,” said the old man. Catherine the Great, however, displaced him, and ordered other deputies to be appointed. Count Stackelberg was found more compliant; and, proud of what Rosen considered as a

other things, 'Many Jacobins<sup>1</sup> are sent to the frontiers, and I am much afraid Messieurs Masson will be served in the same manner.' This letter was opened at the post office, no doubt by order of the Sovereign, and gave occasion to this disagreeable rendezvous. The Count de Plaisance defended his expression by the terrible charge that Messieurs Masson, when they read the newspapers, had always taken the part of the French. Messieurs von Masson avowed this; but begged to know what inference could be drawn from it derogatory to their character, their honour, or even their duty as Russian officers. The result of this business, as far as it has been made public and divulged, was, that

---

disgrace, sold his country.\* He was rewarded by immense tracts of land, surrounding those of the old General, which were taken from the states of the province. Such was the origin of the fortune and influence of Stackelberg, who so long ruled Poland, embroiled Sweden, and afterwards acted the buffoon in the ante-chambers of Zubof.

Besides her relations in Livonia, the wife of the younger Masson is related to several Russian families of considerable weight, as the Sievers, Besborodkos, Tamaras, &c., who, far from employing their influence to obtain the restoration of her property, deserted her in her distress as soon as her husband was proscribed.—

NOTE OF THE FRENCH EDITOR.

1 What the term Jacobin signifies in Russia has been mentioned in a preceding chapter.

\* The words "country," "liberties," &c., when used of Russia or Livonia, relate to the nobility only; for the people are mere property.

the two brothers, without any farther information, were thrown into a *kibitka*,<sup>1</sup> and conveyed to the frontiers under a strong guard.

“The wife of the younger Mons. von Masson fell at the feet of the Emperor in the public street, and loudly exclaimed: ‘Justice! justice! and no favour!’ The Emperor answered: ‘They are guilty; I love order in my country;’ and would have passed on. Madame Masson, however, in despair seized the horse by the bridle; on which the Emperor told her to take care she was not trampled under foot. ‘I had rather die,’ answered this courageous lady, ‘than be the wife of a man who has forfeited his honour.’—It was in vain: the Emperor spurred his horse, and went forward.”<sup>2</sup>

“All St. Petersburg has just witnessed the transaction. The Emperor is just, and we presume, either that he has been deceived, or that Messieurs von Masson have in fact committed some crime, which at the time escaped notice.”<sup>3</sup> It is true we cannot explain the

---

1 A covered sledge used in Russia.

2 The wives of the two brothers left their country to follow them, and their property was confiscated.

3 As, to the great astonishment of their friends, Messieurs von Masson have not yet answered this citation, they give room for suspicion that their proscription might have arisen from more serious causes than those mentioned above. Brought up on the heights of Mount Terrible, they perhaps imbibed there ideas which

mystery in which the affair is involved. If they be guilty, why are they spared? if they be innocent, why are they punished? In the former case, we venture to observe, His Majesty the Emperor owes in some degree to his people the making known their crime; his people, who adore him, who repose all their confidence in his justice, and who would be wretched if they had to dread every secret informer.

---

Russia could not stifle. The elder had been in the suite of Potemkin, and that of Zubof; the younger was at Court about the Grand Duke Alexander, and under the protection of the Empress. Had they not some concern in the project formed of placing that Prince on the throne instead of his father?—a project which Catherine entertained, and which occasioned many others to fall into disgrace at her death. Even Alexander was watched, and all the officers in his suite dismissed. They who know Russia, and remember that a few officers of the guards, with Lestocq, a French surgeon, were sufficient to effect the revolution that placed Elizabeth on the throne, will not think this supposition improbable. It is known, likewise, that the two Massons were among the principal members of a society named the Philadelphic, founded by their uncle, General-in-Chief Melissino, and into which several other generals or courtiers were admitted. This society, which was much talked of at St. Petersburg, appeared, it is true, to be rather a convivial meeting than a political assembly; and Catherine, to whom it was denounced, laughed at it; but the present Emperor may have considered it in a different light; for at the same period the son of Melissino, commander of a regiment of grenadiers, and the chamberlain Mettlef, a member of the same society, were also disgraced and exiled. Be it as it may, no doubt it might appear astonishing to one, unacquainted with the character of Paul, that two superior officers should be thus taken

"The undersigned, all of them relations or friends of Messieurs von Masson, to whom it is consequently of importance to develop this fatal secret, here solemnly require them to make their defence if they be innocent: as men of honour they owe this step to those whose esteem they have gained by their agreeable acquaintance; they owe it even to the Emperor, who has sufficient magnanimity, perhaps, to make reparation for the consequences of a precipitate act, if some villains have deceived him."<sup>1</sup>

*[Here follow the signatures of the friends and relations.]*

---

away from their families, without trial and without cause. But he is known to have treated the agent of Sardinia with less ceremony, because Besborodko said of him that he advised his Court to remain an ally of France. Paul exclaimed in a fury: "What! a Jacobin at my Court! Let him depart instantly." The Bavarian minister, Reglin, was likewise treated as a Jacobin, put into a covered sledge, and conveyed to the frontiers as a criminal; and this because his master would not at once acknowledge Paul as Grand Master of the Order of Malta.

1 It is said that the Empress attempted to speak in favour of the younger Masson; but the Emperor ordered her to be silent on the subject, threatening to punish her if she did not. Some time after he ordered her to be put under arrest for interceding on another occasion. Going his usual round of his palace of Pavlofsky, he caught a sentry asleep near his wife's pavilion. The unfortunate soldier was ordered the bastinado on the spot. At his cries the Empress went to her window, and interceded for his pardon. "What!" exclaimed Paul, "dare you interrupt me in an act of

To form a proper estimation of their courage, notwithstanding the caution employed in this citation, the circumstance of place and the character of Paul must be fully known.

The following is another instance of the hardships which the French and their friends suffer at St. Petersburg. The French and Swiss Protestants have a church at St. Petersburg, in which they permit the Germans also to perform public worship in their own language: but as the original funds of the church were furnished by the French, they retained the management of it. The Germans aspired to a perfect community of property in it, and commenced a lawsuit which they lost. They entreated the protection of Paul, who ordered the senate to revise the sentence; which, however, they confirmed. The Germans made a fresh appeal, and Paul ordered sentence to be given in their favour. Mannsbändel, of Mulhouse, was the French minister, and Count Gollofkin, a captain in the navy, was one

---

military duty? Do you forget, madam, that I am your Emperor also? I will make you remember it, however." At these words, he ordered his aide-de-camp to put the Empress under arrest. The aide-de-camp hesitating, Paul threatened to reduce him to the ranks; accordingly the officer went to inform the Empress that she was under arrest, and placed a guard at her door. This was the second time of her being thus served.



of the elders of the church.<sup>1</sup> These took the liberty of making some remarks on the Emperor's partiality. Mannsbändel was thrown into a dungeon, whence he was at length liberated with injunctions to quit Russia. Count Gollofkin received orders to quit St. Petersburg immediately, and then fresh orders to repair on board the ship he commanded; where, on his arrival, he was immediately turned before the mast.

At the news of the death of Louis XVI., Catherine, seized with affright, took measures of safety against the French in Russia. They were enjoined to take the oath of allegiance to Louis XVII. and to their holy religion, and swear hatred and detestation to the principles professed in France. From the lists printed by order of Government, there were seven or eight hundred Frenchmen in St. Petersburg, and more in Moscow, all of whom found themselves compelled to comply with this injunction. A few only, who had been for some time preparing to return to France, where their property was, chose rather to depart within the space of a week, as the ukase enjoined in

---

<sup>1</sup> The family of the Counts Gollofkin, having being disgraced under the reign of Elizabeth, came into Holland, and embraced the the Protestant religion. Being afterwards recalled to Russia, it retained its religion, and is the only Russian family that professes Protestantism.

case of refusal. This ukase was as absurdly composed as it was inconsistently executed. Not only the French were obliged to take the oath, but almost all foreigners who spoke French or who had their passports written in that language, so that Brabanters, Piedmontese, Milanese and natives of Liége were obliged to do homage to the King of France. It seemed as if the Russian police had foreseen the grand reunion that was soon to take place, and wished to sanction it beforehand. Some natives of the thirteen cantons, Monbelliard, Neufchâtel, and Würtemberg, found themselves under the same compulsion. The Grand Duke Paul exacted it from all foreigners in his suite indiscriminately, and several officiously anticipated his wishes and commands. A greater number, however, excused themselves, saying they were not born subjects of France; and prevailed on the police, at least, to listen to reason.

When Paul became Emperor, he went much farther than his mother. He ordered all the strangers who were in Russia to profess the religion in which they had been brought up. Thus, the Catholics were enjoined strict observance of the rites and commands of the Romish Church. An ukase in all the different languages was posted up, enjoining everyone of them, under pain of being treated as rebels, not to defer the

holy sacrament of penance, and to prepare themselves for receiving the host at Easter; at the same time the priests were ordered to give absolution only to such as should merit it. The Catholic church, which had before been empty, was now crowded; and the priests belonging to it—French, Germans, Italians and Poles—assumed their seats in their confessionals. Before every confessional a box was set up, into which the penitent was obliged to throw a card, containing his name, profession and abode; and every evening these cards were carried to the Emperor. The person confessed then received a card of absolution, signed by the priest, which admitted him to the Communion Table. This ticket was likewise a card of security to him, which he produced, when requisite, before the police. Innkeepers and housekeepers were directed to see these orders carried into execution with respect to persons lodging in their houses, and to inform against such as did not frequent the churches, or who wore pantaloons, round hats, or lapelled waistcoats. The sick were charitably informed that they might require the confessor to attend them at home, and the poor that the host should be carried to them gratis.

The reader may judge of the embarrassment of most of the French, who before this had lived in

Russia as free as possible with regard to religious opinions, of which the Government took no notice. It was necessary to submit, however. The emigrants, who were depicted to Paul as libertines, were obliged to go to Mass in form, walking two by two between a double row of Russian soldiers.

Such Catholics as were in easy circumstances soon found means of obtaining tickets of absolution, even without confessing. The priests sold them at first for fifty roubles (£5), then twenty-five (£2 10s.), and at last disposed of them for ten roubles (£1) apiece, agreeing to throw the cards into the box themselves into the bargain.

A scene that passed near this Catholic church deserves notice here. Paul caused a service to be celebrated in honour of the Duke of Würtemberg, father of the Empress, who had just died at Stuttgart. As it was not in character for him to be present at this Mass, he resolved to place himself at the head of the grenadiers, who encompassed the church to maintain order. It was extremely cold, and his horse, a native, no doubt, of a warmer climate, could not remain motionless. Weary of bridling, wheeling, and making useless efforts to keep him still, he began to gallop through the street, passing and repassing

before the troops and a great crowd of people, whom the funeral ceremony and the Emperor's attendance had attracted. As Paul came galloping on, the crowd took off their hats, and bowed themselves. A group assembled on the Green Bridge, more than four hundred paces from the spot, at length put on their hats, on account of the cold and the distance. Paul spied it, and ordered them immediately to be surrounded by the troops, and sent to the House of Correction. There were fifty or sixty persons of various conditions: they who were not nobles were whipped on three successive days, the nobles were degraded, and such as were officers were turned into the ranks as common soldiers. Among them was a Genevese of the name of Martin, who bribed an officer of the police to allow him to write to some friends at Court. In consequence he was set at liberty, but, indignant at the insult, he instantly left Russia.

Some time after, Paul ordered the corpse of the unfortunate King of Poland to be interred in the same church. He came himself to examine the funeral decorations and the preparations for the ceremony. An upholsterer, employed on the occasion, was at the top of a ladder, dressed in a jacket and pantaloons to work more commodiously. Paul, being informed he

was a Frenchman named Leroux, ordered him to come down, and immediately commanded him to be bastinadoed in the midst of the church.

These are some of the vexations to which foreigners, Frenchmen in particular, are exposed in Russia. It is unquestionable that their situation has become still more deplorable since Paul has declared war against France. What humiliations and insults have they been forced to undergo at the House of Correction in St. Petersburg, as if it were the slave prison of Constantinople.

But this is not the worst. Frenchmen, after they have suffered these evils, may in vain demand an asylum, even in their own country. They will be driven from it like the bird, seeking shelter in the tempest-beaten oak, which is forced away by the agitated branches. Liberty herself is a captive, and insulted in France: she is Bradamante fallen into the cave of Merlin.

Frenchmen coming from Russia are refused permission to re-enter France, under pretence that they must have taken an oath to renounce their country. Ah, Frenchmen! do you forget how many contradictory oaths you yourselves have taken within the space of five or six years? Are those which have been forced upon your unfortunate countrymen in foreign lands alone to be

religiously kept, at the very moment when you make sport of violating those which you yourselves have taken unanimously in the face of Heaven and of France? At least consider the moment when this oath was exacted. It was when the head of Louis had just fallen, and every monarch trembled for his own; when Leopold died, as report said, by poison, and Gustavus, as was asserted, by your assassinating weapons;<sup>1</sup> when Marat and Robespierre bore sway. Judge of the dreadful alarm such news must produce in Russia. The French at St. Petersburg shut themselves up in their houses, and were afraid of being all massacred. The least they expected was a general proscription. I say now, as I thought then, Catherine, even at that juncture, displayed greatness and moderation. By the oath she required, she placed the French under the protection of the Government, and saved them from the fury of the people. None of the allied powers, though reputed less barbarous, adopted a measure so humane. At the moment when the unfortunate French were massacred at Vienna, Naples and Rome, a brother of Marat appeared in safety at the Court of Catherine.

---

<sup>1</sup> At the Court of Russia it was asserted that the Jacobins had assassinated Gustavus and poisoned Leopold. It would have been dangerous there to seem to doubt it.

## APPENDIX

DESCRIPTION OF THE TAURIQUE PALACE AND OF THE  
FÊTE WHICH PRINCE POTESKIN GAVE THERE TO  
CATHERINE II.<sup>1</sup>

THE Taurique Palace was the place chosen by Prince Potemkin for the splendid entertainment which he gave his Sovereign, and which was considered as a testimony of gratitude for the greatness to which she had raised him. After the death of this favourite, Catherine chose it for her autumnal residence.

The façade of this building is composed of an immense colonnade, supporting a cupola. The entrance is into a grand vestibule, communicating with the apartments on the right and left, and at the farther end is a portico, leading to a second vestibule of prodigious size, receiving light from the top, and surrounded at a great height by a gallery, intended for

---

1 As this Palace has been frequently mentioned in the work, we have thought proper to add the following description of it, and of the entertainment which Prince Potemkin gave there to his Sovereign. It is taken from Storch's "Picture of St. Petersburg."



an orchestra, and containing an organ. From this a double row of pillars leads to the principal saloon, designed for grand entertainments. It is impossible to describe the impression made by this gigantic temple; it is more than a hundred paces long, wide in proportion, and is surrounded by a double row of colossal pillars, between which, at mid-height, are boxes ornamented with festoons elegantly sculptured, and lined with silk. From the vaulted roof are suspended globes of glass, which serve as chandeliers, and from which the light is infinitely reflected by looking-glasses, placed at all the extremities of this vast hall. It has neither furniture nor ornaments, except some vases of Carrara marble, astonishing for their size and the beauty of their workmanship, placed at both ends of the saloon, which are rounded into semicircles. Near this saloon is the winter garden, separated from it only by the colonnade. The vault of this vast edifice is supported by pilasters in the form of palm-trees; within the walls are tubes to conduct heat round the building, and canals of metal, filled with hot water, keep up an uniform temperature under this delightful parterre.

The eye wanders with rapture over plants and shrubs of every clime, rests with admiration on an

antique bust, or views with astonishment the various fishes of all hues in crystal vases. A transparent obelisk reproduces to the eye, under a thousand different tints, these wonders of art and nature; and a grotto, hung with looking-glasses, endlessly reflects them. The delicious temperature, the intoxicating odour of the flowers, and the voluptuous silence of this enchanting place, plunge the mind into a pleasing reverie, and transport the imagination to the woods of Italy. The illusion continues till destroyed by the aspect of all the rudeness and severity of winter, when the enchanted eye wanders out of the windows and beholds the frost and snow surrounding this magnificent garden. In the midst of this Elysium rises the majestic statue of Catherine II. in Persian marble.

On this theatre of his grandeur Potemkin arranged the preparations for the entertainment he gave his Sovereign, before he departed for the southern provinces, where death awaited him. This favourite seemed to have a secret presage of his approaching end, and was desirous yet once more to enjoy all the plenitude of her favour.

The preparations for this entertainment were immense, like everything to which his imagination gave birth. He employed artists of all kinds for several

months ; more than a hundred persons assembled daily to prepare themselves for the parts he had destined them to act, and every rehearsal was a kind of feast.

At length the appointed day arrived to gratify the impatience of the whole capital. Besides the Empress and Imperial Family, Prince Potemkin had invited all the Court, the foreign ministers, the Russian nobility and many individuals of the first rank in society.

At six in the evening the entertainment was opened with a masked ball. When the carriage of the Empress approached, meat, drink and clothes of all kinds were distributed in profusion among the assembled populace. The Empress entered the vestibule to the sound of lively music, executed by upwards of three hundred performers. Thence she repaired to the principal saloon, whither she was followed by the crowd ; and ascended a platform, raised for her in the centre of the saloon, and surrounded by transparent decorations, with appropriate inscriptions. The company arranged themselves under the colonnade and in the boxes ; and then commenced the second act of this extraordinary spectacle.

The Grand Dukes Alexander and Constantine, at the head of the flower of all the young persons about the Court, performed a ballet. The dancers, male and female, were forty-eight in number, all dressed in white,

with magnificent scarves and covered with jewels, estimated to be worth above ten millions of roubles (a million sterling). The ballet was performed to select airs, suitable to the occasion, and interspersed with songs. The celebrated Lepic concluded it with a *pas* of his own composing.

The company then removed to another saloon, adorned with the richest tapestry the Gobelins could produce. In the centre was an artificial elephant, covered with rubies and emeralds; and his cornac was a Persian richly clad. On his giving the signal, by striking on a bell, a curtain rose, and a magnificent stage appeared at the end of the apartment. On it were performed two ballets of a new kind, and a lively comedy, by which the company were much amused, concluded the spectacle. This was followed by chorus singing, various dances, and an Asiatic procession, remarkable for its diversity of dresses, all the people subject to the sceptre of the Empress being represented in it.

Presently, all the apartments, illuminated with the greatest care, were thrown open to the eager curiosity of the crowd. The whole palace seemed on fire; the garden was covered with sparkling stones; mirrors innumerable, pyramids and globes of glass reflected

the magic spectacle in all directions. A table was spread with six hundred covers; and the rest of the guests were served standing. The table service was of gold and silver; the most exquisite dainties were served in vessels of the greatest richness; antique cups overflowed with the most costly liquors; and the most expensive chandeliers gave light to the table. Officers and domestics in great number, richly clothed, were eager to anticipate the wishes of the guests.

The Empress, contrary to custom, remained till midnight. She seemed to fear her departure would check the happiness of her favourite. When she withdrew, numerous bands of singers and harmonious music made the vaulted roofs of the palace resound with a hymn to her honour. At this she was so moved that she turned towards Prince Potemkin to express her satisfaction; he, overpowered by the sentiment of what he owed his Sovereign, fell at her feet, took her hand and watered it with tears. This was the last time it was in his power to testify his gratitude to the august author of his grandeur in this place.

## ADDITIONAL NOTE

## ON KORSAKOF.

ON the occasion of the retreat of the Russians from Switzerland, the following anecdote, taken from M. de Castéra's "Life of Catherine," appeared in the public papers :—

"Korsakof, the Empress's favourite, had a handsome face, and was of a very elegant figure ; but, possessing neither understanding nor knowledge, he was as incapable as Zoritz of diminishing the influence of Potemkin. A single fact will display his character. As soon as he had obtained the post of favourite, he conceived a man like him ought, of course, to have a library. Accordingly, he sent for the most celebrated bookseller in St. Petersburg without delay, and informed him that he wanted books for his house at Vasilitchikof, of which the Empress had just made him a present. The bookseller asked what books he wanted. 'You understand that better than I,' answered the favourite ; 'it is your business : but there must be great books at bottom and little ones at top ; as they are at the Empress's.' "

We are far from disputing the truth of this anecdote, which has been confirmed to us by several credible persons to whom the bookseller related the story at the time; but we must inform our readers that the newspapers, when they inserted it, confounded the favourite Korsakof with another of the same name, who commanded the Russian army in Switzerland. General Korsakof is a man of sense, and by no means destitute of knowledge; he made the campaign in Flanders under Prince Coburg, and well knows what a library is.

THE END







